Introduction to stochastic analysis, Spring 2017

Dario Gasbarra

May 10, 2017

Contents

Chapter 1

Why stochastic integration is needed ?

1.1 Introduction

Let x_t and y_t measurable functions $\mathbb{R}^+ \mapsto \mathbb{R}$, where x_t has finite variation and y_t is bounded on every compact interval.

A function of finite variation has a representation

$$x_t = x_0 + x_t^{\oplus} - x_t^{\ominus},$$

where $x_t^{\oplus}, x_t^{\ominus}$ are non-decreasing functions with $x_0^{\oplus} = x_0^{\ominus} = 0$. We can always choose a representation where the corresponding measures $x^{\oplus}(dt), x^{\ominus}(dt)$ are mutually singular. Then, the variation of the function x over the interval $[0,t]$ is defined as

$$v_t(x) := x_t^{\oplus} + x_t^{\ominus} = \sup_{\Pi} \sum_{t_i \in \Pi} |x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i}|$$

where in the left side the supremum is taken over all finite partitions of $[0,t]$ $\Pi = (0 = t_0 < t_1 < \cdots < t_n = t)$ with $n \in \mathbb{N}$. For example when x_t has almost everywhere a derivative $\dot{x}_t$,

$$x_t^{\oplus} = \int_0^t (\dot{x}_s)^+ ds, \; x_t^{\ominus} = \int_0^t (\dot{x}_s)^- ds \quad \text{and} \quad v_t(x) = \int_0^t |\dot{x}_s| ds$$

where $x^{\pm} := \max(\pm x, 0)$.

We have learned from the Probability Theory or Real Analysis courses that in such case the integral

$$I_t = \int_0^t y_s dx_s$$

is well defined as a Lebesgue Stieltjes integral. When the integrand y_s is piecewise continuous or it has finite variation this is a Riemann Stieltjes integral defined as limit of Riemann sums.

$$I_t = \lim_{\Delta(\Pi)\to 0} \sum_i y_{s_i} (x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})$$

where $\Pi = \{0 = t_0 \le s_0 \le t_1 \le s_1 \le t_2 \le \cdots \le t_{n-1} \le s_n \le t_n = t\}$ is a partition of $[0,t]$ and $\Delta(\Pi) := \max_{i \le n}(t_i - t_{i-1})$

This Riemann-Stieltjes integral does not depend on the sequence of partitions and the choice of the middle point.

When $f \in C^1(\mathbb{R} \to \mathbb{R})$, we have the change of variable formula of differential calculus

$$f(x_t) - f(x_s) = \int_s^t f'(x_\tau) dx_\tau$$

In 1900, Louis Bachelier in his Ph.D. thesis *Theorie de la speculation* invented a new probabilistic model to descibe the behaviour of the stock exchange in Paris. This is a stochastic process $(B_t(\omega))_{t \in \mathbb{R}^+}$, defined in continuous time as follows:

Definition 1. *1. $B_0 = 0$, and the increments $(B_t(\omega) - B_s(\omega))$ are stochatically independent over disjoint intervals, and have Gaussian distribution with 0 mean and variance $(t - s)$.*

2. for (P-almost) all ω the trajectory $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$ is continuous.

In 1905 Albert Einstein introduced independently the very same mathematical model and results to explain the thermal motion of pollen particles suspended in a liquid, which haad been observed by the botanist Brown.

Unfortunately, the importance of the work of Bachelier was not recognized at his times, so that B_t is called *Brownian motion* or *Wiener process*, after Norbert Wiener who started the theory of stochastic integration. In textbooks it is also denoted by W_t. In honour of Bachelier we like to use the B_t notation.

In fact, although A.N. Kolmogorov (1933) showed that the paths $B_t(\omega)$ are almosty surely Hölder continuous that is the random quantity

$$\sup\left\{ \frac{|B_t(\omega) - B_s(\omega)|}{|t-s|^\alpha} : 0 \le s, t, \le T, \ s \ne t \right\} < \infty \quad P-\text{almost surely}$$

for all $0 < \alpha < 1/2$ in every compact $[0.T]$, and with probability 1 the paths are nowhere differentiable and have infinite variation.

For integrand paths $h_s(\omega)$ of finite variation using the integration by parts formula we define for every ω

$$\int_0^t h_s(\omega) dB_t(\omega) := B_t(\omega) h_t(\omega) - h_0(\omega) B_0(\omega) - \int_0^t B_s(\omega) dh_s(\omega)$$

This trick does not work for the integral

$$\int_0^t B_s(\omega) dB_s(\omega)$$

It was in 1944 that Kyoshi Ito extended Wiener integral to the class of *non-anticipative* integrand processes. This was the beginning of modern stochastic analysis.

For the history, in 1940 the german-french mathematician Wolfgang Doeblin fighting on the french side was surrounded by the nazis and, before commiting suicide, sent to the french academy of sciences a letter to be opened 60 years later. This letter, published in year 2000, contained many of the ideas on stochastic differential equations that Ito was developing.

Chapter 2

Paul Lévy's construction of Brownian motion

2.0.1 Preliminaries on Gaussian random variables

Definition 2. *A random vector $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ with values in $\mathbb{R}^n$ is jointly Gaussian iff there is a $\mu \in \mathbb{R}^n$ and a non-negative definite matrix K such that the joint characteristic function is given by*

$$\phi_X(\theta) := E(\exp(i\theta \cdot X)) = \exp(i\theta\mu - \frac{1}{2}\theta K \theta^\top)$$

where $y \cdot x$ is the usual scalar product. Equivalently the joint density is given by

$$p_X(x) = (2\pi)^{-n/2} \det(K)^{-1/2} \exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}(\theta - \mu) K^{-1} (\theta - \mu)^\top \Big)$$

Lemma 1. *Let $G(\omega) \in \mathbb{R}$ a standard Gaussian random variable with $E(G) = 0,\ E(G^2) = 1$.*

$$E_P(G^{2n}) = \frac{(2n)!}{n! 2^n}, \quad E_P(G^{2n+1}) = 0 \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N}$$

Since $L^p(P) \supset L^{2n}(P)$ for $p \le 2n$, it follows that $G \in L^p(P)$ $\forall 0 < p < \infty$.

Proof: Hint: by using the moment generating function

$$\frac{d^n}{dt^n} \exp\big(t^2/2\big) = \frac{d^n}{dt^n} E_P\big(\exp(tG)\big) = E_P(G^n \exp(tG)) = E_P(G_n) \text{ at } t = 0$$

where you need to justify interchanging the order of derivation and integration. By expanding the exponential at $t = 0$

$$E(G^n) = \frac{d^n}{dt^n} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{t^{2k}}{2^k k!}\Big|_{t=0}$$

we see that only the term with $2k = n$ contributes giving the result □

When the limit of a Gaussian random variable exists, it is necessarily Gaussian:

Lemma 2. *Let $\{\xi_n\}$ be a sequence of Gaussian r.v. with respective distributions $\mathcal{N}(\mu_n, \sigma_n^2)$, defined possibly on different probability spaces, together with a r.v. ξ. If $\xi_n \xrightarrow{d} \xi$ (convergence in distribution) then ξ is Gaussian $\mathcal{N}(\mu, \sigma^2)$ where the limits $\mu = \lim_n \mu_n$ and $\sigma^2 = \lim_n \sigma_n^2$ exist.*

When $\sigma^2 = 0$, we agree that the constant random variable μ is Gaussian with zero variance.

Proof Since convergence in distribution is equivalent to the convergence of characteristic functions, it follows that

$$\phi_{\xi_n}(\theta) = \exp\left(i\mu_n\theta - \frac{1}{2}\theta^2\sigma_n^2\right) \to \phi_\xi(\theta) \quad \forall\theta$$

where $\forall\theta$

$$|\phi_{\xi_n}(\theta)| = \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\theta^2\sigma_n^2\right) \to |\phi_\xi(\theta)| = \exp\left(-\frac{1}{2}\theta^2\sigma^2\right)$$
$$\mathrm{Arg}(\phi_{\xi_n}(\theta)) = \mu_n\theta \to \mathrm{Arg}(\phi_\xi(\theta)) = \mu\theta$$

therefore

$$\phi_\xi(\theta) = \exp\left(i\mu\theta - \frac{1}{2}\theta^2\sigma^2\right) \quad \square$$

Corollary 1. *In particular if $\{\xi_n\}$ are Gaussian random variables on the same probability space with $\xi_n \xrightarrow{P} \xi$ in probability, then ξ is Gaussian and $\xi_n \to \xi$ in $L^p(\Omega)$ $\forall p < \infty$.*

Obviously $|\xi_n - \xi|^p \xrightarrow{P} 0$, and the family $\{|\xi_n - \xi|^p : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ is uniformly integrable, since it is bounded in $L^{p+\varepsilon}$ for $\varepsilon > 0$:

$$\sup_n \| \xi_n - \xi \|_{p+\varepsilon} \leq 2 \sup_n \| \xi_n \|_{p+\varepsilon} < \infty$$

which follows since $\mu_n \to \mu$, $\sigma_n^2 \to \sigma^2$, and Gaussian random variables have all moments.

Remark We can replace convergence in distribution the lemma 2 with stronger convergence in probability or in L^p convergence,

Corollary 2. *If $X_n \to 0$ in probability and $X_n \sim \mathcal{N}(\mu_n, \sigma_n^2)$, then $\mu_n, \sigma_n^2 \to 0$ and $X_n \to 0$ in $L^p(\Omega)$ for all $p < \infty$.*

Definition 3. *A family of real valued random variables $\{\xi_t : t \in T\}$ is a Gaussian process if $\forall$ n, $t_1, \ldots, t_n \in T$ the law of $(\xi_{t_1}, \ldots, \xi_{t_n})$ is jointly Gaussian.*

Lemma 3. *(Gaussian integration by parts and tail probabilities)*

- *The standard Gaussian density*

$$\phi(x) := \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left(-\frac{x^2}{2}\right)$$

satisfies

$$\frac{d\phi}{dx}(x) = -x\phi(x)$$

- *For a standard Gaussian random variable $G(\omega)$ with $E(G)=0,\ E(G)=1$ we have the Gaussian integration by parts formula:*

$$E_P\Big(f'(G)h(G)\Big)=E_P\Big(f(G)(Gh(G)-h'(G))\Big)$$

In particular for $h(x)\equiv 1$

$$E_P\Big(f'(G)\Big)=E_P\Big(f(G)G\Big)$$

- *For $x>0$ we have the upper bound*

$$P(G>x)=\int_x^\infty \phi(y)dy\le\int_x^\infty \frac{y}{x}\phi(y)dy=-\frac{1}{x}\int_x^\infty \phi'(y)dy=$$
$$\frac{1}{x}\big\{\phi(x)-\phi(\infty)\big\}=\frac{1}{x}\phi(x)$$

2.1 Paul Lévy's construction

We have defined Brownian motion but we haven't yet shown that such stochastic process exists.

We construct recursively the Brownian motion on the dyadics $D_n\subseteq[0,1]$.

Given the values $(B_t:t\in D_n)$, we obtain by linear interpolation a continuous path $(B^{(n)}_t(\omega):t\in[0,1])$.

Then we show that $B^{(n)}_t(\omega)$ converges uniformly for $t\in[0,1]$.

More precisely, let $(G_d(\omega):d\in D)$ i.i.d. standard Gaussian random variables, where the dyadics $D=\bigcup_{n\in\mathbb{N}}D_n$ are countable.

At level $n=0$, for $D_0=\{0,1\}$ set

$$B_0(\omega)=0,\ B_1(\omega)=G_0(\omega),$$
$$\text{and by linear interpolation } B^{(0)}_t(\omega):=tB_1(\omega),\ t\in[0,1]$$

Define the increasing sequence of σ-algebrae $\mathcal{G}_n=\sigma(B_d:d\in D_n)$.

Let $d\in D_n\setminus D_{n-1}$ and $d^-,d^+\in D_{n-1}$ with $d^-<d<d^+$ and $d^+-d^-=2^{1-n}$. $d^\pm$ are the nearest neighbours of d at the previous level $(n-1)$.

Since the increments of (B_t) are independent,

$$P(B_d\in dx|\mathcal{G}_{n-1})=P(B_d\in dx|B_{d^-},B_{d^+})$$

which is a Gaussian law with mean $(B_{d^-}+B_{d^+})/2$ and variance

$$((d-d^-)^{-1}+(d^+-d)^{-1})^{-1}=2^{-(n+1)}$$

We check this: it follows from Bayes' formula, that for a jointly Gaussian vector, the conditional expectation of a coordinate given the other coordinates coincides with the best linear estimator in $L^2(P)$, and we have

$$E(B_d|B_{d^-},B_{d^+})=E(B_d|B_{d-})+\frac{\big(B_{d+}-E(B_{d+}|B_{d-})\big)\mathrm{Cov}(B_d,B_{d^+}|B_{d-})}{\mathrm{Var}(B_{d+}|B_{d-})}$$
$$=B_{d-}+(B_{d+}-B_{d-})2^{(n-1)}2^{-n}=(B_{d^-}+B_{d^+})/2$$
$$\mathrm{Var}(B_d|B_{d^-},B_{d^+})=\mathrm{Var}(B_d|B_{d-})-\frac{\mathrm{Cov}(B_d,B_{d^+}|B_{d-})^2}{\mathrm{Var}(B_{d+}|B_{d-})}=2^{-n}-2^{-2n}\,2^{n-1}=2^{-(n+1)}$$

We define inductively for $d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}$ and corresponding $d^{\pm} \in D_{n-1}$

$$B_d(\omega) := \frac{B_{d^-}(\omega) + B_{d^+}(\omega)}{2} + G_d(\omega) 2^{-(n+1)/2} \tag{2.1}$$

We show that, for $t \in D$

$$B_t(\omega) := \sum_{d \in D} G_d(\omega) \eta_d(t) = \sum_{d \in D} G_d(\omega) \int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s) ds = \tag{2.2}$$

$$= \sum_{d \in D_n} G_d(\omega) \eta_d(t) = \sum_{d \in D_n} G_d(\omega) \int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s) ds, \quad \text{when } t \in D_n \tag{2.3}$$

where $\dot{\eta}_0(s) \equiv 0$, $\dot{\eta}_1(s) := \mathbf{1}_{[0,1]}(s)$ and for $d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}$, $n > 0$,

$$\dot{\eta}_d(s) = \left\{ \mathbf{1}_{[d^-,d)}(s) - \mathbf{1}_{[d,d^+)}(s) \right\} 2^{(n-1)/2}$$

and $d^{\pm}$ are the nearest neighbours of $d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}$ at level $(n-1)$.

To visualize the function $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$, is the infinite sums of sawtooth function each with support on some dyadic interval $[k2^{-n}, (k+1)2^{-n})$ with independent Gaussian weights.

Note that for $d \in D_N \setminus D_{N-1}$ with neighbours $d_-, d_+ \in D_{N-1}$,

$$\int_0^1 \dot{\eta}_d(s)^2 ds = \int_{d^-}^{d^+} \dot{\eta}_d(s)^2 ds = \left(2^{(n-1)/2}\right)^2 (d^+ - d^-) = 1$$

$$0 = \int_0^1 \dot{\eta}_d(s) ds = \int_{d-}^{d+} \dot{\eta}_d(s) ds$$

so that

$$\int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s) ds = 0$$

for all $t \notin (d_-, d_+)$. Since $D_{N-1} \cap (d_-, d_+) = \emptyset$ necessarily

$$\int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s) ds = 0$$

for $d \in D_N \setminus D_{N-1}$ and $t \in D_{N-1}$. This shows that B_t has a finite series expansion when $t \in D$.

The functions $\left(\dot{\eta}_d : d \in D\right)$ are orthogonal in $L^2([0,1], dt)$ and form the *Haar system* : when $d \neq d' \in D$, either both $d, d' \in D_N \setminus D_{N-1}$ for some N, and

$$\int_0^1 \dot{\eta}_d(s) \dot{\eta}_{d'}(s) ds = 0$$

since they have joint support, or $d \in D_N \setminus D_{N-1}$ and $d' \in D_{N-1}$ for some N (or the other way around), and orthogonality follows since $\dot{\eta}_{d'}$ is constant on the support of $\dot{\eta}_d$ (the constant is zero when the supports are disjoint).

Let's show that for each $t \in D$ the series expansion (2.2) satisfies the recursion step (2.1).

Note first that for $t \in [0,1], \forall n \in N$, there is one and only one $d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}$ such that $t \in \text{support}(\eta_d)$.

Assume that $t \in D_N \setminus D_{N-1}$ with neighbours $t_-, t_+ \in D_{N-1}$.

Then

$$B_t = \frac{B_{t^-}(\omega) + B_{t^+}(\omega)}{2} + G_t(\omega) 2^{-(N+1)/2} =$$

$$\sum_{n=0}^{N-1} \sum_{d \in D_n} G_d(\omega) \frac{1}{2} \Big(\int_0^{t-} \dot\eta_d(s) ds + \int_0^{t+} \dot\eta_d(s) ds \Big) + G_t(\omega) \int_0^t \dot\eta_t(s) ds$$

where for $t \in D_N \setminus D_{N-1}$, $\eta_t(s) \geq 0$ with maximum

$$\eta_t(t) = \int_0^t \dot\eta_t(s) ds = \int_{t_-}^t \dot\eta_t(s) ds = 2^{-N} 2^{(N-1)/2} = 2^{-(N+1)/2}$$

and $\forall d \in D_{N-1}$, $t \in D_N \setminus D_{N-1}$,

$$\frac{1}{2} \Big(\int_0^{t-} \dot\eta_d(s) ds + \int_0^{t+} \dot\eta_d(s) ds \Big) = \int_0^t \dot\eta_d(s) ds$$

since when $d \in D_{N-1}$, $\dot\eta_d(s)$ is constant in the interval $(t-, t+)$. We have obtained the series expansion (2.2) of $B_t(\omega)$.

We show that for P-almost surely the infinite series representation of $B_t(\omega)$ is converging uniformly on $t \in [0,1]$,

We use the Gaussian tail estimate: given $c > 0$, $G_d \sim \mathcal{N}(0,1)$

$$P(|G_d| > c\sqrt{n}) \leq \frac{2}{c\sqrt{2\pi n}} \exp\big(-\frac{c^2 n}{2}\big)$$

$$\begin{aligned} P\big(\omega : \exists d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1} \text{ with } |G_d(\omega)| > c\sqrt{n}\big) &\leq \sum_{n \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}} P(|G_d| > c\sqrt{n}) \\ &\leq \frac{2^n}{c\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\big(-\frac{c^2 n}{2}\big) = \text{ const.} \exp(-\alpha n) \end{aligned}$$

where $\alpha = (c^2/2 - \log 2) > 0$ for c large enough. For such c, since

$$\sum_{n \geq 0} \exp(-\alpha n) = (1 - \exp(-\alpha))^{-1} < \infty$$

by Borel Cantelli lemma

$$P\Big(\omega : \exists N(\omega) \text{ with } |G_d(\omega)| \leq c\sqrt{n},\ \forall n \geq N(\omega),\ d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}\Big) = 1$$

Therefore for P-almost all ω there is $N(\omega)$ such that $\forall n \geq N(\omega)$, and $\forall t \in [0,1]$

$$\Big| \sum_{d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}} G_d(\omega) \int_0^t \dot\eta_d(s) ds \Big| \leq c\sqrt{n} 2^{-(n+1)/2}$$

since for $d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}$, with neighbours $d^-, d^+ \in D_{n-1}$

$$\int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s)ds = 0$$

when $t \notin (d^-, d^+)$, and for $t \in (d^-, d^+)$

$$0 \leq \int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s)ds \leq \int_0^d \dot{\eta}_d(s)ds = 2^{-(n+1)/2} .$$

It means that, P-almost surely and uniformly in $[0,1]$, the series

$$\sum_{n \geq 0} \sum_{d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}} G_d(\omega) \int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s)ds = \lim_{n \to \infty} B_t^{(n)}(\omega)$$

is absolutely convergent. Note: by computing the series: for $0 < p < q < 1$, $\sum\limits_n \sqrt{n} p^n < \infty$, since for n large enough $\sqrt{n} < (q/p)^n$ and $\sum\limits_n q^n < \infty$. This means that P-almost surely $\{t \mapsto B_t^{(n)}(\omega) : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ is a Cauchy sequence on the space of continuous functions $C([0,1], \mathbb{R})$ equipped with the uniform norm. By completeness, for P-almost all ω a continuous limiting function $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$ exists.

The random process $(B_d(\omega) : d \in D)$ is a Brownian motion on the dyadics, since by construction at every dyadic level D_n the distribution of $(B_d : d \in D_n)$ coincides with the finite dimensional distribution of the Brownian motion.

Let's fix $k \geq 0$ and $0 = t_0 < t_1 < \cdots < t_k \leq 1$.

We find a sequence $(t_1^{(n)}, \ldots, t_k^{(n)}) \subseteq D_n$ such that $\max\limits_{0 \leq i \leq k} |t_i^{(n)} - t_i| \leq 2^{-n}$.

For P-almost all ω the path $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$ is continuous, and

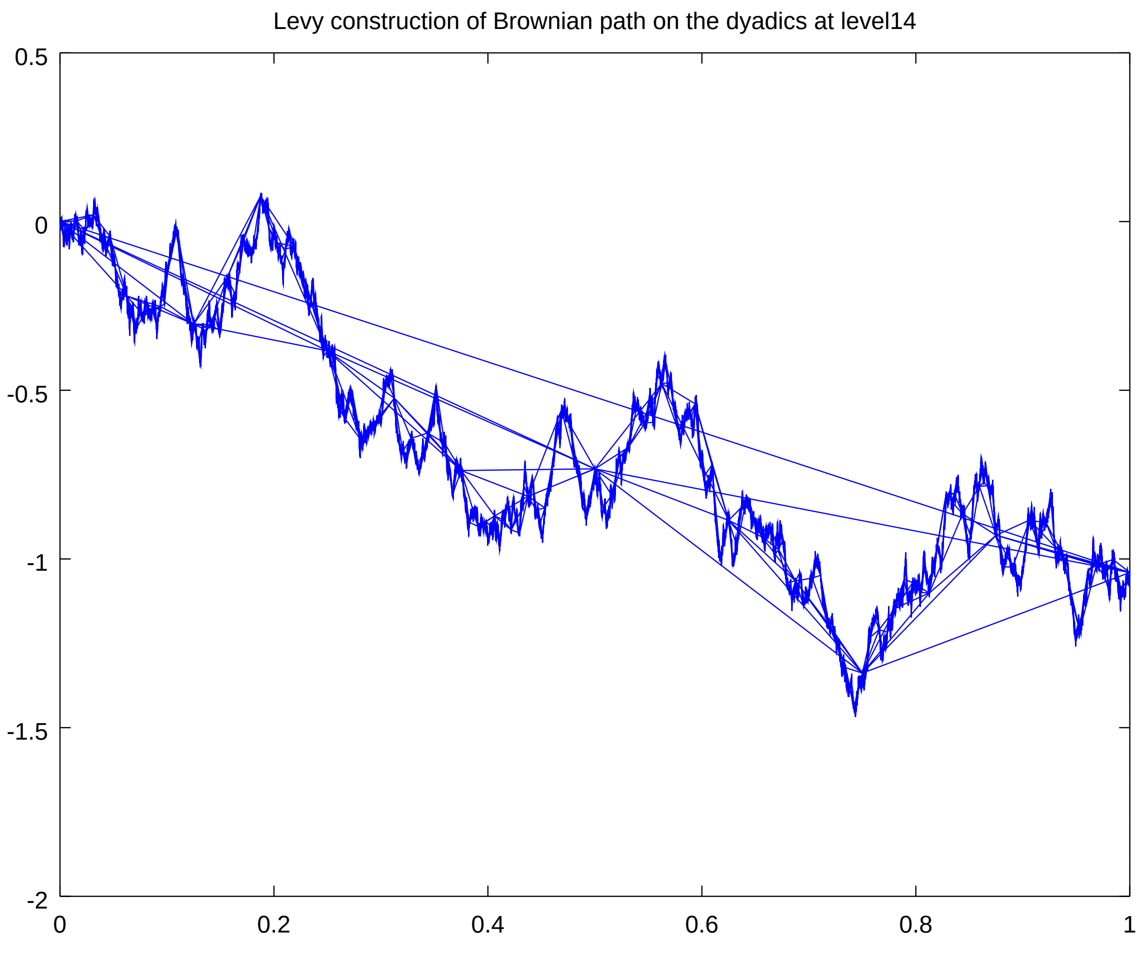
$$\big(B_{t_1^{(n)}}(\omega), \ldots, B_{t_k^{(n)}}(\omega)\big) \to \big(B_{t_1}(\omega), \ldots, B_{t_k}(\omega)\big)$$

Since $\big(B_{t_1^{(n)}}(\omega), \ldots, B_{t_k^{(n)}}(\omega)\big)$ is a jointly Gaussian vector and almost sure convergence implies convergence in distribution, by the multivariate version of lemma 2 it follows that the limit is a Gaussian random vector.

Morever since the increments are bounded in $L^2(\Omega)$

$$\lim_{n \to \infty} E\bigg((B_{t_i^{(n)}} - B_{t_{i-1}^{(n)}})(B_{t_j^{(n)}} - B_{t_{j-1}^{(n)}}) \bigg) = \lim_{n \to \infty} \delta_{ij}(t_i^{(n)} - t_{i-1}^{(n)})$$
$$= \delta_{ij}(t_i - t_{i-1}) = E\bigg((B_{t_i} - B_{t_{i-1}})(B_{t_j} - B_{t_{j-1}}) \bigg)$$

where since Gaussian variables have moments of all order, in the last equality we can pass the limit inside the expectation by uniform integrability. Since we have shown that the increments of $B_t(\omega)$ over disjoint intervals are jointly Gaussian and uncorrelated, with $E((B_t - B_s)^2) = (t - s)$, we conclude that $(B_t(\omega) : t \in [0,1])$ is a Brownian motion.


Levy construction of Brownian path on the dyadics at level14
0.5
0
-0.5
-1
-1.5
-2
0
0.2
0.4
0.6
0.8
1

2.2 Wiener integral, isonormal Gaussian processes, and white noise

Definition 4. *Define the Cameron-Martin space of absolutely continuous functions with square integrable derivative*

$$H = \left\{ t \mapsto h(t) = \int_0^t \dot{h}(s)ds : \dot{h} \in L^2([0,1], dt) \right\}$$

For $h, f \in H$ with $h(t) = \int_0^t \dot{h}(s)ds$, $f(t) = \int_0^t \dot{f}(s)ds$ we define the scalar product

$$(h, f)_H := (\dot{h}, \dot{f})_{L^2([0,1])} = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s)\dot{f}(s)ds$$

H equipped with the scalar product is an Hilbert space. $\| h \|_H := \sqrt{(h,h)_H}$ is a norm.

The functions $\{\dot{\eta}_d(s) : d \in D\}$ used in Lévy construction form the Haar system, which is a complete orthonormal basis of the Hilbert space $L^2([0,1], dt)$, meaning that

$$(\eta_{d'}, \eta_{d''})_H = (\dot{\eta}_{d'}, \dot{\eta}_{d''})_{L^2([0,1])} = \int_0^1 \dot{\eta}_{d'}(s)\dot{\eta}_{d''}(s)ds = \delta_{d',d''}$$

and every $\dot{h} \in L^2([0,1], dt)$ has expansion

$$\dot{h}(t) = \sum_{n \geq 0} \sum_{d \in D_n} \dot{\eta}_d(t)(\dot{\eta}_d, \dot{h})_{L^2([0,1])}$$

where the series converges in $L^2([0,1], dt)$-sense.

Equivalently the primitives

$$t \mapsto \eta_d(t) = \int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s)ds$$

form a complete orthonormal basis in H, so that every $h \in H$ has the expansion

$$h(t) = \sum_{n \geq 0} \sum_{d \in D_n} \eta_d(t)(\eta_d, h)_H$$

converging in $\| \cdot \|_H$ norm.

Definition 5. *An isonormal Gaussian space $\{B(h) : h \in H\}$ is a collection of zero mean jointly Gaussian random variables such that the covariance structure matches the scalar product in H*

$$E\big(B(h)B(f)\big) = (h, f)_H = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s)\dot{f}(s)ds$$

for $h, f \in H$.

In particular we have the isometry between the subspace $\{B(h) : h \in H\}$ *of* $L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ *and* H

$$\| B(h) \|_{L^2(\Omega,P)}^2 = E\big(B(h)^2\big) = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s)^2 ds = \| h \|_H^2$$

Note that if $(h_n : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq H$ *is a Cauchy sequence in* H*-norm, then by the isometry the Gaussian variables* $(B(h_n) : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq L^2(\Omega, P)$ *form a Cauchy sequence, and since* L^2 *is complete necessarily it has a limit in* L^2 *sense. Moreover the limit must be Gaussian, since limits in distribution of Gaussian variables are Gaussian, and* L^2*-convergence is stronger than convergence in probability which implies convergence in distribution.*

In this way we define stochastic integrals of functions $\dot{h}(s) \in L^2([0,1], dt)$*:*

We approximate $\dot{h}(s)$ *by piecewise constant functions*

$$\dot{h}_n(s) = \sum_{t_i^n \in \Pi_n} \dot{h}_i^n \mathbf{1}_{(t_{i-1}^n, t_i^n]}(s)$$

in $L^2([0,1], dt)$*, for some* $(\dot{h}_1, \dots, \dot{h}_n)$ *and* Π_n *finite partition of* $[0,1]$ *The sawtooth function*

$$h_n(t) = \int_0^t \dot{h}_n(s) ds \text{ approximates } h(t) = \int_0^t \dot{h}(s) ds$$

is an element of the Cameron Martin space H*, is in correspondance with its piecewise constant derivative* $\dot{h}_n(s)$*.*

For a piecewise constant integrand $\dot{h}_n(s)$ *we define the stochastic integral as the Riemann sum*

$$B(h_n) := \int_0^1 \dot{h}_n(s) dB_s = \sum_{t_i^n \in \Pi_n} \dot{h}_i^n (B_{t_i^n \wedge 1} - B_{t_{i-1}^n \wedge 1})$$

we check that this satisfies the isometry, which then is used to define the stochastic integral

$$B(h) = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s) dB_s$$

as the limit in $L^2(\Omega, P)$ *of the Cauchy sequence* $(B(h_n))$*.*

This was historically the first construction of a stochastic integral with deterministic integrands and it is due to Norbert Wiener. Using martingales, Kiyoshi Ito extended the construction to a much wider class of random integrand processes.

These Gaussian variables are identified with the *Wiener integrals*

$$B(h) = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s) dB_s, \quad h \in H$$

Let $\{G_d(\omega) : d \in D\}$ i.i.d. standard Gaussian variables on the probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$. We construct the isonormal Gaussian space indexed by $h \in H$ as follows:

For the elements of the Haar basis, define

$$\int_0^1 \dot{\eta}_d(s) dB_s := G_d, \quad d \in D$$

For $h \in H$ By using the Haar expansion,

$$B(h) = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s) dB_s := \sum_{n \geq 0} \sum_{d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}} G_d(\omega)(\dot{h}, \dot{\eta}_d)_{L^2([0,1])}$$

where the infinite sum converges in $L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$.

In particular for $t \in [0,1]$ and $\dot{h}(s) = \mathbf{1}_{[0,t]}(s)$

$$B(h) = \int_0^1 \mathbf{1}_{[0,t]}(s) dB_s = \int_0^t dB_s = B_t =$$
$$\sum_{n \geq 0} \sum_{d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}} G_d(\omega) \int_0^1 \dot{\eta}_d(s) \mathbf{1}_{[0,t]}(s) ds$$
$$= \sum_{n \geq 0} \sum_{d \in D_n \setminus D_{n-1}} G_d(\omega) \int_0^t \dot{\eta}_d(s) ds$$

where the convergence is in $L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$.

Note this is exactly the series expansion used in Paul Lévy construction of Brownian motion, and it was shown that it converges P-almost surely in the Banach space of continuous functions equipped with uniform norm, which implied that P-almost surely $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$ is continuous.

This construction works also by replacing the Haar system with any another complete orthonormal system in $L^2([0,1], dt)$.

Another insight is given by using white noise. Let $\{\dot{B}_t(\omega) : t \in [0,1]\}$ a zero-mean Gaussian *generalized process* with the covariance defined formally as the generalized function

$$E(\dot{B}_t \dot{B}_s) = \delta_0(t - s)$$

where $\delta_0(t-s)$ is the Dirac delta function of distribution theory, meaning that for $t \neq s$ $\dot{B}_t$ and $\dot{B}_s$ are uncorrelated while $\dot{B}_t$ has infinite variance. Such object does not exists pointwise since there are not Gaussian variables with infinite variance.

Formally $\dot{B}_t = \frac{dB_t}{dt}$ is the derivative of Brownian motion (whose paths are almost surely is nowhere differentiable as we will see).

Define for $h \in H$

$$B(h) = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s) dB_s = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s) \frac{dB_s}{ds} ds = \int_0^1 \dot{h}(s) \dot{B}(s) ds$$
$$= (\dot{h}, \dot{B})_{L^1([0,1])} = (h, B)_H$$

Note that $(h, B)_H$ is not defined ω-wise but it will be well define in $L^2(\Omega, P)$ sense as the limit of the smooth truncated series

We see using Fubini that

$$E(B(h)B(f)) = E\Big(\int_0^1 \dot h(s)dB_s \int_0^1 \dot f(t)dB_t\Big) = E\Big(\int_0^1 \dot h(s)\dot B(s)ds \int_0^1 \dot f(t)\dot B_t dt\Big)$$
$$= \int_0^1\int_0^1 \dot h(s)\dot f(t) E\big(\dot B(s)\dot B(t)\big)dt\,ds = \int_0^1\int_0^1 \dot h(s)\dot f(t)\delta_0(t-s)dtds =$$
$$= \int_0^1 \dot h(s)\Big(\int_0^1 \dot f(t)\delta_0(t-s)dt\Big)ds =$$
$$\int_0^1 \dot h(s)\dot f(s)ds = (\dot h, \dot f)_{L^2([0,1],dt)} = (h,f)_H$$

Note that for the Haar system $\{\eta_d : d\in D\}$

$$\dot B(s) := \sum_{n\ge 0}\sum_{d\in D_n} G_d(\omega)\dot\eta_d(s)$$

satisfies formally the definition of white noise, since

$$E\Big(\sum_{d\in D} G_d\dot\eta_d(s)\sum_{d'\in D} G_{d'}\dot\eta_{d'}(t)\Big) = \sum_{d\in D}\sum_{d'\in D}\dot\eta_d(s)\dot\eta_{d'}(t)E\big(G_dG_{d'}\big)$$
$$= \sum_{d\in D}\dot\eta_d(s)\dot\eta_d(t)E(G_d^2) = \sum_{d\in D}\dot\eta_d(s)\dot\eta_d(t)$$

and by the Plancharel identity

$$\int_0^1\int_0^1\Big\{\sum_{d\in D}\dot\eta_d(s)\dot\eta_d(t)\Big\}f(t)h(s)ds = \sum_{d\in D}\Big(\int_0^1 f(t)\dot\eta_d(t)ds\Big)\Big(\int_0^1 h(s)\dot\eta_d(s)ds\Big)$$
$$= \sum_{d\in D}(\dot f,\dot\eta_d)_{L^2([0,1])}(\dot h,\dot\eta_d)_{L^2([0,1])} = (\dot f,\dot h)_{L^2([0,1])}$$
$$= \int_0^1 \dot f(t)\dot h(t)dt = \int_0^1\int_0^1 \dot f(t)\dot h(s)\delta_0(t-s)dtds$$

which shows that formally the covariance is the Dirac delta function

$$E(\dot B_t\dot B_s) = \sum_{d\in D}\dot\eta_d(s)\dot\eta_d(t) = \delta_0(t-s)$$

Conclusion the white noise $\dot B_t$ introduced formally as the derivative of Brownian motion is a generalized random process which does not exist pointwise but it makes sense to integrate a test function against it.

2.3 Hölder continuity of Brownian paths

Here we explain some ideas from Paul Malliavin book *Stochastic analysis*, chapter 1. Let $(H,(\cdot,\cdot)_H)$ be a separable Hilbert space, with an orthonormal basis $\{e_n : n\in\mathbb{N}\}\subset H$. This means that $(e_n,e_m)_H = \delta_{n,m}$, and

$$H = \overline{\text{LinearSpan}\big(e_n : n\in\mathbb{N}\big)}$$

where we take closure in $\|\cdot\|_H$-norm. It also implies that, if for $h\in H$ we have $(h,e_n)_H = 0\ \forall n\in\mathbb{N}$, necessarly $h=0$.

Proposition 1. *If H is infinite dimensional, a Gaussian measure $\gamma(d\omega)$ on the space $(H,\mathcal{B}(H))$ such that the variables $\xi_n(\omega) := (e_n,\omega)$ are i.i.d. standard normal under γ does not exist.*

Proof Otherwise

$$\omega = \sum_n (e_n,\omega)e_n$$

$$\|\omega\|_H^2 = \sum_n (e_n,\omega)^2 \|e_n\|_H^2 = \sum_n \xi_n(\omega)^2 = \infty \quad , \ \gamma(d\omega) \text{ almost surely}$$

by applying Borel Cantelli lemma.

In other words, if $\{\xi_n\}$ is a sequence of i.i.d. standard normal random variables on a probability space $(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$, then P-almost surely , $\left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \xi_n e_n\right) \notin H$.

Proposition 2. *Let $U : H \to H$ be a self-adjoint operator of Hilbert-Schmidt class, which means that there is an orthonormal basis of eigenvalues $\{e_n\} \subset H$ with respective real eigenvectors $\{\lambda_n\}$ with $Ue_n = \lambda_n e_n$ such that*

$$\sum_n \lambda_n^2 < \infty$$

Equip H with the scalar product $(h,g)_B = (U(h),U(g))_H = \sum_n \lambda_n^2 (e_n,g)_H \ (e_n,h)_H$ and denote by $B = \bar{H}$ the completement of H under this norm.

Then $\left(\sum_n \xi_n e_n\right)$ converges P-almost surely in $|\cdot|_B$ norm to a random element of B.

Proof since $(e_i,e_j)_B = \delta_{ij}\lambda_i^2$,

$$Y_n := \left| \sum_{k=1}^n \xi_k e_k \right|_B^2 = \sum_{k=1}^n \xi_k^2 \lambda_k^2$$

Now Y_n a submartingale with decomposition

$$Y_n = \sum_{k\le n} \lambda_k^2 + \sum_{k \le n} (\xi_k^2 - 1)\lambda_k^2 = A_n + M_n$$

Now M_n is a martingale bounded in L^2 since

$$E\left(\left\{ \sum_{k\le n} (\xi_k^2-1)\lambda_k^2 \right\}^2\right) = 2\sum_{k\le n} \lambda_k^4 < 2\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \lambda_k^4 < \infty$$

It follows that M_n is an uniformly integrable martingale since it is bounded in $L^2(\Omega,P)$ and therefore as $n\to\infty$ the limits M_∞ and Y_∞ exist P-almost surely.

Therefore P-almost surely $\left(\sum_{k=1}^n \xi_k e_k\right)$ is a Cauchy sequence in B and by completeness it has a limit.

By construction H is dense in B with respect to the $|.|_B$ norm.

For $h \in H$ and $\omega \in B$, P-almost surely exist the limit

$$W(h)(\omega) = \sum_n (e_n, h)_H \xi_n = \sum_n (e_n, \omega)_H (e_n, h)_H := (h, W)_H$$

because

$$E_P\Big(\sum_n (e_n, h)_H \xi_n\Big)^2 = \sum_n (e_n, h)_H^2 = \Big\| \sum_n (e_n, h) e_n \Big\|_H = \|h\|_H$$

This can be interpreted as an extension of the scalar product $(h, \omega)_H$ which is well defined for $h \in H$ and P almost all $\omega \in B$.

Definition 6. *We say that $\{W(h) : h \in H\} \subset L^2(\Omega, P)$ is the isonormal gaussian process indexed by H.*

The map $h \mapsto W(h)$ is an isometry from $(H, (\cdot,\cdot))_H$ to $L^2(\Omega, P)$ with $W(h) \sim \mathcal{N}(0, \| h \|_H^2)$ and $E_P(W(h)W(g)) = (h, g)_H$, $h, g \in H$.

We extend this construction following the ideas of Paul Malliavin, to show the following:

Take $H = L^2([0,1], dt)$ which is identified with the Cameron-Martin space H^1 of the Brownian motion $(W_t : t \in [0,1])$. Let $\{\dot{e}_n\}$ be an orthogonal basis in $L^2([0,1], dt)$, and (ξ_n) a sequence of i.i.d. standard normal random variables, then

$$W_n(t) := \sum_{k=1}^n \xi_k \int_0^t \dot{e}_k(s) ds$$

P-almost surely converges in supremum norm $|\cdot|_\infty$ to a random element $W(t, \omega)$ of $C_0([0,1])$.

Definition 7. *A Radonifying norm $|\cdot|$ on H is a norm such that there is a countable family of dense (in the original H-norm) mutually orthogonal finite dimensional subspaces $\Theta_n \subset H$ with respective dimensions d_n, such that if $(e_1^n, \dots, e_{d_n}^n)$ is an orthonormal basis of the subspace Θ_n w.r.t. $(\cdot,\cdot)_H$, for*

$$\Gamma_n = \big(e_1^n \xi_1^n + \dots + e_{d_n}^n \xi_{d_n}^n\big) \quad \textit{we have}$$
$$\sum_n P\big(|\Gamma_n| > n^{-2}\big) < \infty$$

where (ξ_j^n) is a sequence of i.i.d. standard normal random variables.

Proposition 3. *Let $|\cdot|$ a Radonifying norm for H , and let $\{\Theta_n\}$ and $\{\Gamma_n\}$ as in the definition. Denote by B the completion of H under $|\cdot|$.*

Then P-almost surely $\left(\sum\limits_{n=1}^{\infty} \Gamma_n\right)$ converges in $(B, |\cdot|)$, where B is the completement of H under the $|\cdot|$ norm.

Proof By Borel Cantelli lemma, almost surely $|\Gamma_n| \le n^{-2}$ for all n large enough, which implies $\sum_n |\Gamma_n| < \infty$. Therefore $\sum_{k \le n} \Gamma_k$ is a Cauchy sequence w.r.t. the $|\cdot|$ norm and it has a limit in B. □

We have seen that the original Hilbert norm $|\cdot|_H$ is never a Radonifying norm (Proposition 1) when H is infinite dimensional.

Consider the Cameron-Martin space of Brownian motion,

$$H^1 = \left\{ \text{ functions } h \text{ defined on } [0,1] \text{ with } h(t) = \int_0^t \dot{h}(s)ds \text{ where } \dot{h} \in L^2([0,1],dt) \right\}$$

with $(h,g)_{H^1} := (\dot{h},\dot{g})_{L^2([0,1],dt)}$.

Let $\{\dot{e}_n(t)\}$ be an orhonormal basis of $L^2([0,1],dt)$, (for example in the Lévy construction of Brownian motion we use the Haar basis), then

$$\left\{ e_n(t) = \int_0^t \dot{e}_n(s)ds : n \in \mathbb{N} \right\}$$

is an orthonormal basis in H^1 by taking limit in $L^2(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$ we construct the gaussian process

$$W_t(\omega) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \xi_n(\omega)e_n(t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \xi_n(\omega) \int_0^t \dot{e}_n(s)ds$$

where $\xi_n \sim \mathcal{N}(0,1)$ are i.i.d. real gaussian r.v.

$(W_t(\omega) : t \in [0,T])$ are jointly gaussian r.v.

We show that (W_t) is a Brownian motion by computing the covariance: by using independence and Parseval identity

$$\begin{aligned} E_P(W_tW_s) = \quad & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} E(\xi_n\xi_k)\Big(\int_0^t \dot{e}_n(u)du\Big)\Big(\int_0^s \dot{e}_k(v)dv\Big) = \\ & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} E(\xi_n^2)(\dot{e}_n,\mathbf{1}_{[0,t]})_{L^2([0,1])}(\dot{e}_n,\mathbf{1}_{[0,s]})_{L^2([0,1])} = (\mathbf{1}_{[0,t]},\mathbf{1}_{[0,s]})_{L^2([0,1])} = t \wedge s \end{aligned}$$

Theorem 1. *The supremum norm $|\cdot|_\infty$ is a Radonifying norm for H^1.*

Proof Denote by H^1_n the subspace of functions which are piecewise linear on the dyadic intervals $(k2^{-n},(k+1)2^{-n})$.

These are finite dimensional subspaces, H^1_n has dimension 2^n and $H^1_n \supset H^1_{n-1}$. Let δ_n be the orthogonal complement of H^1_{n-1} in H^1_n:

$$\delta_n = \{\eta \in H^1_n : \eta(k2^{-(n-1)}) = 0 \quad \forall k\}$$

δ_n has dimension 2^{n-1}. We can take as orthonormal basis in δ_n the Haar functions $\{\eta^n_k(t)\}$ with

$$\begin{aligned} \eta^n_k(t) &= \int_0^t \dot{\eta}^n_k(s)ds \qquad \text{where} \\ \dot{\eta}^n_k(s) &= 2^{(n-1)/2}\big(\mathbf{1}_{(2k2^{-n},(2k+1)2^{-n}]}(s) - \mathbf{1}_{(2k+12^{-n},(2k+2)2^{-n}]}(s)\big) \end{aligned}$$

Let

$$\Gamma_n(t) = \sum_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} \xi_k^n \eta_k^n(t)$$

where $\{\xi_k^n\}$ are i.i.d. standard normal. Note that for a fixed dyadic level n, the functions $\eta_k^n(t), k = 0, \dots, 2^{n-1} - 1$, have disjoint support.

$$|\Gamma_n|_\infty = \sup_{t\in[0,1]} |\Gamma_n(t)| = \sup_k |\xi_k^n| \int_{2k2^{-n}}^{(2k+1)2^{-n}} \dot{\eta}_k^n(s)ds = 2^{-(n+1)/2} \sup_k |\xi_k^n|$$

$$P(|\Gamma_n|_\infty > n^{-2}) = P\left(\bigcup_{k=1}^{2^{n-1}} \{|\xi_k^n| > n^{-2}2^{(n+1)/2}\} \right)$$
$$\leq 2^{n-1} P(|\xi| > n^{-2}2^{(n+1)/2}) = 2^n P(\xi > n^{-2}2^{(n+1)/2}) \leq 2^n P(\xi > 2^{n/4})$$

when n is large enough, since $2^{n/4} = o(n^{-2}2^{(n+1)/2})$.

By the integral criteria of convergence of series,

$$\sum_n 2^n P(\xi > 2^{n/4}) < \infty \Longleftrightarrow \int_0^\infty 2^x P(\xi > 2^{x/4})dx < \infty$$

by changing variables, $y = 2^{x/4}$, $x = 4\log y/\log 2$

$$\Longleftrightarrow \int_1^\infty y^4 P(\xi > y) \left(\frac{dx}{dy}\right) dy < \infty$$
$$\Longleftrightarrow \int_1^\infty y^3 P(\xi > y)dy < \infty$$
$$= \text{ (integrating by parts) } = \frac{1}{4} \int_1^\infty y^4 P(\xi \in dy) \leq \frac{1}{8} E(\xi^4) = \frac{3}{8} < \infty$$

The result follows by proposition 3. □

For $\alpha \in (0,1]$ introduce the Hölder norm

$$|g|_\alpha := |g(0)| + \sup_{t,s\in[0,1]} \frac{|g(t) - g(s)|}{|t-s|^\alpha}$$

The space C_α of α-Hölder continuous functions g form a Banach space C_α with norm $|\cdot|_\alpha$.

The following result says that we can realize the Brownian motion as a gaussian measure on C_α for every $\alpha \in (0,1/2)$. All these realizations have the same Cameron-Martin space H^1.

Theorem 2. *For $\alpha < 1/2$ the norm $|\cdot|_\alpha$ is Radonifying. Consequently, P-almost surely the series $\sum_n \xi_n(\omega)e_n$ converges in $|\cdot|_\alpha$ norm. This means that almost surely the paths of the Brownian motion are Hölder continuous of order α, for all $\alpha < \frac{1}{2}$.*

Proof We construct $\Gamma_n(t)$ as in the proof of Theorem 1.1. and show that $|\cdot|_\alpha$ is a Radonifying norm. We must bound the quantity

$$|\Gamma_n|_\alpha = \sup_{s,t} \frac{|\Gamma_n(t) - \Gamma_n(s)|}{|t-s|^\alpha} =$$
$$\max_{k=0,\dots,2^{n-1}-1} \left\{ \left(|\xi_k^n| 2^{-(n+1)/2} 2^{\alpha n} \right) \vee \max_{h=0,\dots,k-1} \left(|\xi_k^n - \xi_h^n| 2^{-(n+1)/2} 2^{(n-1)\alpha} (k-h)^{-\alpha} \right) \right\}$$

since at every dyadic level n, the functions $\eta_k^n(t), k = 0, \dots, 2^{n-1}-1$, have disjoint support. Now

$$P(|\Gamma_n|_\alpha > n^{-2}) =$$
$$P\Big(\bigcup_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} \{ |\xi_k^n| 2^{-n(\frac{1}{2}-\alpha)} 2^{-1/2} > n^{-2} \} \cup \bigcup_{h=0}^{k-1} \{ |\xi_k^n - \xi_h^n| 2^{-n(\frac{1}{2}-\alpha)} 2^{-(\frac{1}{2}+\alpha)} (k-h)^{-\alpha} > n^{-2} \} \Big)$$
$$= P\Big(\bigcup_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} \Big\{ A_k^{(n)} \cup \bigcup_{k=0}^{k-1} B_{h,k}^{(n)} \Big\} \Big) \le \sum_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} \Big\{ P(A_k^{(n)}) + \sum_{k=0}^{k-1} P(B_{h,k}^{(n)}) \Big\}$$

To show that the Hölder norm is Radonifying, it is enough to check that

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} P(A_k^{(n)}) + \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} \sum_{h=0}^{k-1} P(B_{h,k}^{(n)}) < \infty$$

For the first sum we proceed as in Theorem 1.1, using the assumption that $(1/2 - \alpha) > \varepsilon > 0$, it is enough to check that for a standard Gaussian r.v. ξ

$$\sum_n 2^n P(|\xi| > 2^{n\varepsilon}) < \infty \Longleftrightarrow \int_0^\infty x P(|\xi|^{1/\varepsilon} > x) dx = \frac{1}{2} E(|\xi|^{2/\varepsilon}) < \infty$$

which holds since the standard Gaussian random variable ξ has all moments. Recall that by Fubini,

$$\int_0^\infty x P(|Y| > x) dx = \int_0^\infty \int_0^\infty \mathbf{1}(y > x) P(|Y| \in dy) x dx = \int_0^\infty \Big(\int_0^y x dx \Big) P(|Y| \in dy) =$$
$$\frac{1}{2} \int_0^\infty y^2 P(|Y| \in dy) = \frac{1}{2} E_P(Y^2) \ .$$

and we have used this for $Y = |\xi|^{1/\varepsilon}$. For the second term, note first that for $k \ne h$, $(\xi_h - \xi_k) \stackrel{L}{=} \xi\sqrt{2}$. We get

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} \sum_{h=0}^{k-1} P\big(|\xi| 2^{-n(\frac{1}{2}-\alpha)} 2^{-\alpha} (k-h)^{-\alpha} > n^2 \big) \le C + \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \sum_{k=0}^{2^{n-1}-1} \sum_{h=0}^{k-1} P\big(|\xi| (k-h)^{-\alpha} > 2^{n\varepsilon} \big)$$

fore some finite constant C, since for $0 < \varepsilon < (1/2 - \alpha)$, and n large enough

$$2^{n\varepsilon} < n^{-2} 2^{n(\frac{1}{2}-\alpha)} 2^\alpha .$$

Using the integral criterium for the convergence of the series

$$\int_0^\infty \int_0^{2^x} \int_0^y P\big(|\xi|(y-z)^{-\alpha} > 2^{x\varepsilon}\big)dzdydx = \int_0^\infty \int_0^{2^x} \int_0^y P\big(|\xi|z^{-\alpha} > 2^{x\varepsilon}\big)dzdydx =$$
$$\frac{1}{\log 2}\int_1^\infty dw \frac{1}{w}\int_0^w dy \int_0^y P\big(|\xi|z^{-\alpha} > w^\varepsilon\big)dz =$$
$$\frac{1}{\log 2}\int_1^\infty dw \int_0^w \frac{w-z}{w} P\big(|\xi|z^{-\alpha} > w^\varepsilon\big)dz \leq$$
$$\frac{1}{\log 2}\int_0^\infty dw \int_0^w \frac{w-z}{w} P\big(|\xi|z^{-\alpha} > w^\varepsilon\big)dz =$$
$$\frac{1}{\log 2}\int_0^\infty dw \int_0^1 uP\big(|\xi|(wu)^{-\alpha} > w^\varepsilon\big)wdu =$$
$$\frac{1}{\log 2}\int_0^1 u \int_0^\infty wP\big(|\xi|u^{-\alpha} > w^{\varepsilon+\alpha}\big)dwdu =$$
$$\frac{1}{\log 2}\int_0^1 u \int_0^\infty wP\big(|\xi|^{1/(\varepsilon+\alpha)}u^{-\alpha/(\varepsilon+\alpha)} > w\big)dwdu =$$
$$\frac{1}{2\log 2}E(|\xi|^{2/(\varepsilon+\alpha)})\int_0^1 u^{(\varepsilon-\alpha)/(\varepsilon+\alpha)}du = \frac{(\varepsilon+\alpha)}{4\varepsilon\log 2}E(|\xi|^{2/(\varepsilon+\alpha)}) < \infty,$$

since $(\varepsilon-\alpha)/(\varepsilon+\alpha) > -1$ □

Chapter 3

Stochastic process: Kolmogorov's construction

3.1 Kolmogorov's extension

We skip the proof of Kolmogorov extension theorem since it was proved in the Probability Theory course

We prove first Daniell-Kolmogorov extension theorem which tells when a stochastic process (X_t) indexed by a time parameter $t \in T$ exists as collection of random variables.

Whether this collection of random variables can be combined together into a random path with some continuity properties with respect to the parameter, is the content of Kolmogorov's continuity theorem.

Definition 8. *Let $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ be a probability triple. A stochastic process is a collection of random variables $(X_t(\omega))_{t \in T}$ with values in $(\mathbb{R}^d, \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^d)$ with parameter set T.*

In these lectures we will consider $T = \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{Z}, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}^+, \mathbb{Q}$ but some other index sets may appear.

Definition 9. *Let $X = (X_t(\omega))_{t \in T}$ and $X' = (X'_t(\omega))_{t \in T}$ $\mathbb{R}$-valued stochastic processes on the respective probability spaces $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ and $(\Omega', \mathcal{F}', P')$. We say that X and X' are versions the same process if their finite dimensional laws coincide: $\forall k \in \mathbb{N}, t_1 \dots t_k \in T$ $B_1, \dots B_k \in \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^d)$*

$$P\Big(X_{t_1} \in B_1, \dots, X_{t_k} \in B_k\Big) = P'\Big(X'_{t_1} \in B_1, \dots, X'_{t_k} \in B_k\Big)$$

Definition 10. *Let $X = (X_t(\omega))_{t \in T}$ and $Y = (Y_t(\omega))_{t \in T}$ $\mathbb{R}$-valued stochastic processes on the same probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ We say that X and Y are modifications of each other if $\forall t \in T$*

$$P\big(X_t = Y_t\big) = 1$$

Definition 11. *Let $X = (X_t(\omega))_{t\in T}$ and $Y = (Y_t(\omega))_{t\in T}$ $\mathbb{R}$-valued stochastic processes on the same probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ We say that X and Y are indistinguishable when*

$$P\Big(\omega : X_t(\omega) = Y_t(\omega)\ \forall t \in T\Big) = 1$$

Exercise 1. *When X and Y are indistinguishable, they are modification of each other. When X and Y are each others' modifications, they share the same finite dimensional laws. Show a simple example of a X, Y which are modfication of each other but not indistinguishable.*

Definition 12. *We say that the family of finite dimensional distributions*

$$P_{t_1,\dots,t_n} : \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^n) \to [0,1], \qquad \text{with } n \in \mathbb{N}, t_1, \dots, t_n \in T$$

is consistent , when

- $$P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(A_1 \times \cdots \times A_n) = P_{t_{\pi(1)},\dots t_{\pi(n)}}\big(A_{t_{\pi(1)}} \cdots \times A_{t_{\pi(n)}}\big)$$
  $$\forall n \in \mathbb{N}, A_1, \dots A_n \in \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}), t_1, \dots, t_n \in T, \quad \forall \text{ permutation } \pi$$

- $$P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(A_1 \times \cdots \times A_n) = P_{t_1,\dots,t_n,t_{n+1}}(A_1 \times \cdots \times A_n, \mathbb{R})$$

Theorem 3. *(Daniell-Kolmogorov,1933) Let*

$$\left(P_{\mathbf{t}} : \mathbf{t} \in \bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} T^n\right)$$

a consistent family of finite dimensional probability distributions with arbitrary index set T.

There exist a unique probability measure $\mathbf{P}$ on the product space $\Omega = \mathbb{R}^T$ equipped with the cylinder σ-algebra generated by the product topology, such that $\forall n \in \mathbb{N}, t_1, \dots, t_n \in \mathbb{N}, B_n \in \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^n)$,

$$\mathbf{P}\left(\omega \in \mathbb{R}^T :\ (\omega_{t_1}, \dots, \omega_{t_n}) \in B_n\right) = P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(B_n) \tag{3.1}$$

Proof

The elements of $\Omega = \mathbb{R}^T$ are functions $t \mapsto \omega_t$. $\sigma(\mathcal{C})$ coincides with the smallest σ-algebra on $\Omega = R^T$ which makes the canonical evalutions $\omega \mapsto X_t(\omega) = \omega_t$ measurable for all $t \in T$.

We define the cylinders' algebra $\mathcal{C}$ with typical elements

$$C = \left\{\omega \in \mathbb{R}^T : (\omega_{t_1}, \dots, \omega_{t_n}) \in B_n\right\}$$

where $n \in \mathbb{N}, t_1, \dots, t_n \in \mathbb{N}, B_n \in \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^n)$.

We take (3.1) as a definition of the map $\mathbf{P} : \mathcal{C} \to [0,1]$.

By using the consistency assumption you can check that $\mathbf{P}(C)$ does not depend on the particular representation of a cylinder $C \in \mathcal{C}$.

Since every finite number of cylinders can be represented on a common index set, since the finite dimensional distributions are probabilities, it is also not difficult to check that $\mathbf{P}$ is finitely additive on $\mathcal{C}$.

The next step is to use Charatheodory's theorem to extend $\mathbf{P}$ to a σ-additive probability measure defined on the σ-algebra $\sigma(C)$.

All we need to show is that $\mathbf{P}$ is σ-additive on the algebra $\mathcal{C}$, that is

If $\{C_n : n \in \mathbb{N}\} \subseteq \mathcal{C}$ is a sequence of cylinders such that

$$C_n \supseteq C_{n+1} \forall n, \text{ and } \bigcap_{n\in\mathbb{N}} C_n = \emptyset,$$

necessarily $\lim_{n\to\infty} \mathbf{P}(C_n) = 0$.

We proceed by contradiction, assuming $\mathbf{P}(C_n) \geq \varepsilon > 0\ \forall n$ and showing that $\bigcap\limits_{n\in\mathbb{N}} C_n \neq \emptyset$.

By choosing the representations and eventually repeating the cylinders in the sequence, we always find a sequence $(t_n) \subseteq T$ and a sequence of cylinders $\{D_n : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ with representations

$$D_n = \left\{\omega \in \mathbb{R}^T : (\omega_{t_1}, \dots, \omega_{t_n}) \in A_n\right\}$$

where $A_n \in \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^n)$, such that $D_n \supseteq D_{n+1} \forall n$, and for all $m \in \mathbb{N}$ there is some n such that $D_n = C_m$.

It follows that $\mathbf{P}(D_n) \geq \varepsilon > 0\ \forall n$ and $\bigcap_{n\in\mathbb{N}} C_n = \bigcap_{n\in\mathbb{N}} D_n$.

Now since $P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}$ is a probability measure on $\mathbb{R}^n$, and A_n is Borel measurable, there is a closed set $E_n \subseteq A_n$ with $P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(A_n \setminus E_n) < \varepsilon 2^{-n}$. By σ-additivity, intersecting E_n with a ball large enough centered around the origin we find also a compact $K_n \subseteq A_n$ with

$$P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(A_n \setminus K_n) < \varepsilon 2^{-n}$$

Consider the cylinders

$$F_n = \left\{\omega \in \mathbb{R}^T : (\omega_{t_1}, \dots, \omega_{t_n}) \in K_n\right\}$$

Since these are not necessarily included into each other we take the intersections

$$F'_n = \bigcap_{m=1}^{n} F_k = \left\{\omega \in \mathbb{R}^T : (\omega_{t_1}, \dots, \omega_{t_n}) \in K'_n\right\}$$

where $K'_n \subseteq K_n$ are compacts. We have

$$\begin{aligned} P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(K'_n) = \mathbf{P}(F'_n) = \mathbf{P}(D_n) - \mathbf{P}(D_n \setminus F'_n) = \\ P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(A_n) - P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}\left(\bigcup_{m=1}^{n} (A_n \setminus (K_m \times \mathbb{R}^{m-n})\right) \\ \geq P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}(A_n) - P_{t_1,\dots,t_n}\left(\bigcup_{m=1}^{n} (A_m \setminus K_m) \times \mathbb{R}^{n-m}\right) \\ \geq \mathbf{P}(D_n) - \sum_{m=1}^{n} \mathbf{P}(D_m \setminus F_m) \geq \varepsilon - \sum_{m=1}^{n} \varepsilon 2^{-m} > \varepsilon/2 > 0 \end{aligned}$$

Therefore for each n, $\exists (x_1^{(n)} \dots, x_n^{(n)}) \in K'_n \neq \emptyset$.

Since the sequence F'_n is non-increasing, necessarily the sequence $(x_1^{(n)}) \subseteq K'_1$. By compactness, there is a convergent subsequence $x_1^{(n_l)} \to x_1^* \in K'_1$.

The subsequence $(x_1^{(n_l)}, x_2^{(n_l)}) \subseteq K'_2$, and there is a convergent subsequence with limit $(x_1^*, x_2^*) \in K'_2$.

By induction, we find a sequence (x_n^*) with $(x_1^*, \dots, x_n^*) \in K'_n \; \forall n$. The set

$$D^* = \left\{ \omega \in \mathbb{R}^T : \omega_{t_n} = x_n^* \quad \forall n \right\} \subseteq F'_n \subseteq D_n \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N}$$

is nonempty, and $D^* \subseteq \bigcap_n F_n$ contradicting the hypothesis □

Definition 13. *A Borel space* $(S, \mathcal{S})$ *is a measurable space which can be mapped by a one-to-one measurable map* f *with measurable inverse to a Borel subset of the unit interval* $([0,1], \mathcal{B}([0,1]))$.

Lemma 4. *In a Borel space, the* σ*-algebra* $\mathcal{S}$ *is countably generated.*

Corollary 3. *Kolmogorov extensions theorem applies to processes* $(X_t(\omega))_{t\in T}$ *taking vaues in a Borel space* $(S, \mathcal{S})$*, (for example* $\mathbb{R}^d$*), without restrictions on the parameter set* T*.*

Proof By using a measurable bijection $f : S \leftrightarrow B \in \mathcal{B}([0,1])$, we define first a stochastic process $(Y_t(\omega))$ with values in $[0,1]$ and obtain $X_t(\omega) = f^{-1}(Y_t(\omega))$ with values in S.

Exercise 2. *A separable metric space* (S, d) *equipped with the Borel* σ*-algebra generated by the open sets is a Borel space.*

Hint: there is countable set $\{x_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ which is dense in S. $\forall x \in S$ there is a subsequence $\{x_{n_k}\}_{k\in\mathbb{N}}$ such that $d(x_{n_k}, x) \to 0$.

Solution: We construct such subsequence explicitely as follows: let

$$n_k = \arg \min_{1 \le m \le 2^k} \{ d(x_m, x) \}$$

where we use lexicographic order in case of ambiguity.

Since $n_k \le 2^k$ it has a binary expansion

$$n_k = \sum_{m=0}^{k-1} x_m^{(k)} 2^m, \quad x_m^{(k)} \in \{0,1\}$$

so we can code n_k by the word $(x_0^{(k)}, \dots, x_{k-1}^{(k)}) \in \{0,1\}^k$, By concatenating these words we obtain the binary expansion of some $u \in [0,1]$. This map is one-to-one, from u we can recover the subsequence and (x_{n_k}) and the limiting point x_0. Although this map is not continuous, it is measurable with measurable inverse: a ball centered around some x_n is mapped to a Borel set in $[0,1]$, and the inverse image of a dyadic interval $(k2^{-n}, (k+1)2^{-n}]$ is a Borel set in S.

Warning: Working with random processes taking values in non-separable spaces can be tricky, since Kolmogorov theorem does not apply directly. During this lecture course we will stay on the safe side.

Chapter 4

Continuity of sample paths

So far we have constructed the probability measure $\mathbf{P}$ on $(\Omega = \mathbb{R}^T, \sigma(\mathcal{C}))$ such that the canonical process $X_t(\omega) = \omega_t$ follows the specified family of finite dimensional distribution. Suppose T is a topological space which is not countable, for example $T = \mathbb{R}$. In such case, the set

$$A = \{\omega : t \mapsto \omega_t \text{ is continuous at all } t \in T \}$$

does not belong to $\sigma(\mathcal{C})$ simply because to check continuity in an uncountable set we need uncountably many evaluations of the function $t \mapsto \omega_t$. In other words, $\mathbf{1}_A(\omega)$ is not a random variable.

Theorem 4. *(Kolmogorov's continuity criterium)*
We denote the dyadic subsets of $[0,1]^d$ *by*

$$D = \bigcup_{m \in \mathbb{N}} D_m \quad \textit{where} \quad D_m := \{2^{-m}(k_1, \dots, k_d) : 0 \le k_i \le 2^m\}, \ m \in \mathbb{N}.$$

Note that D *is countable and dense in* $[0,1]^d$.
On a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$, *let* $(X_t : t \in T = [0,1]^d)$ *a stochastic process with values in a normed vector space* $(E, \| \cdot \|_E)$ *(for example* $E = \mathbb{R}^m$*) When for* $p, r > 0$

$$E\biggl(\| X_t - X_s \|_E^p\biggr) \le c|t-s|^{d+r}$$

for all $t, s \in T$, *then for all* $0 < \alpha < r/p$

$$\| X_t(\omega) - X_s(\omega) \|_E \le K_\alpha(\omega)|t-s|^\alpha \quad \forall s, t \in D$$

with $K_\alpha \in L^p(\Omega)$, *in particular* $K_\alpha(\omega) < \infty$ P*-almost surely.*

Proof
Let $N_m = \bigl\{(s,t) \in D_m : |s-t| = 2^{-m}\bigr\}$, the set of nearest neighbours pairs at level m.
Since $\#N_m = \frac{1}{2}\sum_{s \in D_m} \#\bigl\{\text{neighbours of } s\bigr\} \le 2^{-1} 2^{d(m+1)} 2d$

$$E\biggl(\sup_{(s,t)\in N_m} \| X_t - X_s \|^p\biggr) \le \sum_{(s,t)\in N_m} E\bigl(\| X_t - X_s \|^p\bigr) \le (2^{d(m+1)}d)(c2^{-m(d+r)}) = 2^d dc 2^{-mr} \tag{4.1}$$

For $t \in D$ let t_m the nearest element in D_m.

Either $t_{m+1} = t_m$ or $|t_{m+1} - t_m| = 2^{-(m+1)}$, that is $(t_m, t_{m+1}) \in N_{m+1}$. Define analogously (s_m) for $s \in D$. Since $t, s \in D$ implies $t, s \in D_k$ for some k large enough, by using telescopic sums

$$X_t - X_s = (X_{t_m} - X_{s_m}) + \sum_{k=m}^{\infty} (X_{t_{k+1}} - X_{t_k}) - \sum_{k=m}^{\infty} (X_{s_{k+1}} - X_{s_k})$$

where we sum over finitely many non-zero terms. Note that if $t, s \in D$, $t \neq s$, necessarily $2^{-(m+1)} < |t - s| \leq 2^{-m}$ for some $m \in \mathbb{N}$. In such case, $(t_m - s_m) = 2^m$ that is t_m and s_m are neighbours in D_m By starting the telescoping sum from such m,

$$\| X_t - X_s \| \leq \| t_m - s_m \| + \sum_{k=m}^{\infty} \| X_{t_{k+1}} - X_{t_k} \| + \sum_{k=m}^{\infty} \| X_{s_{k+1}} - X_{s_k} \|$$

which gives

$$\sup\{ \| X_t - X_s \|^p \colon t, s \in D, 2^{-(m+1)} < |t - s| \leq 2^{-m} \} \leq 3 \sum_{k=m}^{\infty} \sup_{(t,s) \in N_m} \| X_{t_{k+1}} - X_{t_k} \|^p$$

By the triangle inequality in $L^p(\Omega, P, E)$ and (4.1)

$$E\Bigg(\sup_{s,t \in D: |s-t| < 2^{-m}} \| X_t - X_s \|^p \Bigg)^{1/p} \leq 3 \sum_{k=m}^{\infty} E_P \Bigg(\sup_{(t,s) \in N_k} \| X_t - X_s \|^p \Bigg)^{1/p}$$

$$\leq \bar{c} \sum_{k=m}^{\infty} 2^{-kr/p} = \bar{c} 2^{-mr/p}$$

Fix $\alpha < (r/p)$. By taking union over disjoint sets

$$E\Bigg(\sup_{(s,t) \in D: s \neq t} \left\{ \frac{\| X_t - X_s \|}{|t - s|^\alpha} \right\}^p \Bigg)^{1/p} \leq \bar{c} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} 2^{m\alpha} 2^{-mr/p} < \infty$$

which implies

$$K_\alpha(\omega) := \sup_{(s,t) \in D: s \neq t} \frac{\| X_t(\omega) - X_s(\omega) \|}{|t - s|^\alpha} < \infty \quad P\text{-almost surely} \tag{4.2}$$

Note that $\omega \mapsto K_\alpha(\omega)$ is measurable and $K_\alpha \in L^p(\Omega)$. By taking countable intersections of these events with $\alpha_n = \frac{r}{p}\big(\frac{n}{n+1}\big)$, almost surely (4.2) holds simultaneously for all $\alpha < r/p$ $\square$

Corollary 4. *Under the assumptions of Theorem 4, when* $(E, \| \cdot \|)$ *is complete, there is a modification* $\widetilde{X}_t(\omega)$ *of the process* $X_t(\omega)$ *with* α*-Hölder continuous trajectories for all* $0 < \alpha < r/p$.

Proof It follows outside a measurable set $\mathcal{N}$ with $P(\mathcal{N}) = 0$, the paths $t \mapsto X_t(\omega)$ are uniformly continuous on the compact D.

Therefore for each $t \in [0, 1]$

$$\widetilde{X}_t(\omega) := \begin{cases} \lim\limits_{s \to t, s \in D} X_s(\omega) & \omega \in \mathcal{N}^c \\ x_0 & \omega \in \mathcal{N} \end{cases}$$

is well defined and measurable ($x_0 \in E$ is chosen arbitrarily).

This follows since, for $\omega \in \mathcal{N}^c$, if $s_n, s'_n \in D_n$ are dyadic sequences with $s_n \to t$ and $s'_n \to t$, $\forall \varepsilon > 0\ \exists n_\varepsilon(\omega)$ such that $\forall m, n > n_\varepsilon(\omega)$

$$\max\Big\{ \| X_{s_n}(\omega) - X_{s'_n}(\omega) \|,\ \| X_{s_m}(\omega) - X_{s_n}(\omega) \|,\ \| X_{s'_m}(\omega) - X_{s'_n}(\omega) \| \Big\} < \varepsilon$$

Therefore for $\omega \in \mathcal{N}^c$ $X_{s_n}(\omega)$ and $X_{s'_n}(\omega)$ are Cauchy sequences in the complete space E with a common limit.

Note that $\widetilde{X}_s(\omega) = X_s(\omega)$ for $s \in D$, and since $(X_s(\omega))_{s \in D}$ is α-Hölder continuous when $\omega \in N^c$, $0 < \alpha < 2/p$ by construction $(\widetilde{X}_s(\omega))_{s \in [0,1]^d}$ is α-Hölder continuous $\forall \omega$ and all $0 < \alpha < r/p$.

From the hypothesis on increments' moments, by Chebychev inequality we get for fixed $t \in [0,1]^d$

$$X_s \stackrel{P}{\to} X_t \text{ as } s \to t,\ s \in T$$

in probability. By starting with a dyadic sequence, we find a subsequence $(s_k) \subseteq D$ such that $s_k \to t$ and P-almost surely

$$\lim_k X_{s_k}(\omega) = X_t(\omega)$$

Since $X_s(\omega) = \widetilde{X}_s(\omega)\ \forall s \in D$, it follows that $\forall t \in [0,1]^d$

$$P(\{\omega : X_t(\omega) = \widetilde{X}_t(\omega)\}) = 1$$

that is $\widetilde{X}_t(\omega)$ is a continuous modification of $X_t(\omega)$.

In particular $\widetilde{X}_t$ and X_t have the same finite dimensional distributions □

Note that this continuous modification is unique up to indistinguishability. If $\hat{X}_t(\omega)$ is another continuous modification of $X_t(\omega)$, necessarily

$$P(\hat{X}_s(\omega) = X_s(\omega) = \tilde{X}_s(\omega) \quad \forall s \in D) = 1$$
$$\Longrightarrow P(\hat{X}_t(\omega) = \tilde{X}_t(\omega) \quad \forall t \in [0,1]^d) = 1$$

Corollary 5. *On the probability space* $(\Omega = (\mathbb{R})^{\mathbb{R}}, \sigma(\mathcal{C}))$, *there is a probability measure* $\mathbf{P}_W$ *(the Wiener measure) and a stochastic process* $B_t(\omega)$ *which satisfies definition 1. Morover there is a modification which has locally* α*-Hölder continuous paths* $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$ $\forall \omega \in \Omega$ *for any* $0 < \alpha < 1/2$.

Locally means that α*-Hölder continuity holds on compacts.*

Note by taking images, the Wiener measure $\mathbf{P}_W$ *is also defined on the spaces* $C(\mathbb{R}^+; \mathbb{R}), C^\alpha(\mathbb{R}^+; \mathbb{R})$ *of continuous and locally* α*-Hölder continuous functions, for* $0 < \alpha < 1/2$. *Under the Wiener measure, in these function spaces the canonical process is a Brownian motion.*

Proof We first take $T = [0,1]$ $\Omega = \mathbb{R}^{[0,1]}$ Definition 1 determines consistently the family of finite dimensional distributions of Brownian motion. By Kolmogorov extension theorem, there a probability measure $\mathbf{P}_W$ on $(\Omega, \sigma(\mathcal{C}))$

consistent with the finite dimensional distributions' specification. In particular the canonical process $X_t(\omega) = \omega_t$ has Gaussian increments $(X_t(\omega) - X_s(\omega)) \sim N(0, t-s)$.

The Gaussian distribution has the following property: if $G(\omega)$ is a Gaussian random variable with $E(G) = 0$, then $E(G^{2n+1}) = 0 \; \forall n$, and there are constants (c_n) such that

$$E(G^{2n}) = c_n \{E(G^2)\}^n$$

By the continuity theorem with $d = 1$ and $p = 2n, n \in \mathbb{N}$ we get

$$E(|X_t - X_s|^{2n}) = c_n |t-s|^n = c_n |t-s|^{1+(n-1)} \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N}$$

from which it follows that $(X_t(\omega))$ has a modification $(B_t(\omega))$ which is α-Hölder continuous for all α with

$$\alpha < \sup_{n \in N} \frac{(n-1)}{2n} = 1/2$$

Let $(B_t^{(n)})_{t \in [0,1]}$ a sequence of independent copies of the Brownian motion defined on the canonical space of continuous function $\Omega_n = C([0,1], \mathbb{R})$ equipped with the Wiener measure. Note that since $C([0,1], \mathbb{R})$ is separable there is not problem to apply Kolomogorov theorem to define the product measure on the infinite product space.

By concatenating these independent copies into a single continuous path we obtain a Brownian motion indexed by $T = [0, +\infty)$, or $T = \mathbb{R}$.

4.1 Non-differentiability

Theorem 5. *(Dvoretzky, Erdös, Kakutani, 1961) P-almost surely, the Brownian path $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$ is nowhere differentiable.*

Proof. Let $M, h > 0$ and

$$A_{M,h} = \big\{\omega : \exists s \in [0,1] : \; |B_t(\omega) - B(\omega)_s| \le M|t-s| \; \text{ if } |t-s| < h\big\}$$

$$C_{M,n} = \bigcup_{k=1}^{2n} \big\{\omega : |B_{k/n}(\omega) - B_{(k-1)/n}(\omega)| \le 4M/n\big\} \cap$$

$$\cap \big\{\omega : |B_{(k+1)/n}(\omega) - B_{k/n}(\omega)| \le 4M/n\big\} \cap \big\{\omega : |B_{(k+2)/n} - B_{(k+1)/n}(\omega)| \le 4M/n\big\}$$

We show that $A_{M,h} \subset C_{M,h}$ when $n \ge 2/h$. If $\omega \in A_{M,h}$ there is s such that $|B_t(\omega) - B_s(\omega)| \le M|t-s| \le 2/n$. Let $k = \lfloor ns \rfloor = \max\{i \in \mathbb{N} : i \le ns\}$. Then

$$|(k+2)/n - s| \le 2/n, \quad |(k+1)/n - s| \le 2/n$$

which implies

$$|B_{(k+2)/n} - B_{(k+1)/n}| \le |B_{(k+2)/n} - W_s| + |B_{(k+1)/n} - B_s| \le 4M/n \; .$$

Similarly

$$|B_{k/n} - B_{(k-1)/n}| \le 4M/n \; \text{ and } |B_{(k+1)/n} - B_{k/n}| \le 4M/n$$

which means that $\omega \in C_{M,h}$.

Since the Brownian motion has stationary and independent increments,

$$P(C_{M,n}) = 2nP(B_{1/n} \leq 4M/n)^3 \leq 2n\left(\frac{4M}{\sqrt{2\pi n}}\right)^3 \to 0$$

as $n \to \infty$. Therefore $0 \leq P(A_{M,h}) \leq \limsup_{n\to\infty} P(C_{M,n}) = 0$, $\forall M, h$, which means that $\forall M$ the event that $\exists s \in [0,1]$ such that

$$\limsup_{h\to 0} \frac{|B_{s+h} - B_s|}{|h|} \leq M$$

has probability zero, and by taking the union over $M \in \mathbb{N}$ the theorem follows.

□

Chapter 5

Quadratic variation and Ito-Föllmer calculus

In 1979 Hans Föllmer published a short paper with title "Ito calculus without probabilities", where he showed how the stochastic calculus invented by Ito, using convergence in of Riemann sums in $L^2(\Omega, P)$ sense, applies surprisingly also pathwise for some non-random functions, using some special sequences of finite partitions.

We choose to start our journey into stochastic analysis from the modern pathwise result of Föllmer, which is rather minimalist.

Later in the following chapters we develop the classical Ito calculus based on martingales.

Note that in the real world is often the case that a random process say $(B_t(\omega) : t \in [0,1])$ is realized only once, and convergence in mean square sense or in probability remain rather abstract and unsatisfactory concepts, while almost sure convergence results are the most meaningful, since we are mainly interested in that single realized path.

This approach is also discussed by Dieter Sondermann in his book *Introduction to stochastic calculus for finance* .

Let (x_t) be the integrator and (y_t) integrand funktions

When (x_t) has *finite variation* , that is $x_t = (x_t^{\oplus} - x_t^{\ominus})$, where $x^{\oplus}, x^{\ominus}$ are non-decreasing (and therefore Borel-measurable), and (y_t) is Borel measurable and bounded, the Lebesgue-Stieltjes integral is well defined

$$\int_0^t y_s dx_s = \int_0^t y_s dx_s^{\oplus} - \int_0^t y_s dx_s^{\ominus}$$

When y_s is also piecewise continuous, or it has finite variation on compacts, the Lebesgue-Stieltjes and Riemann-Stieltjes integrals coincide. The differential calculus is first order: for $F(\cdot) \in C^1(\mathbb{R})$,

$$F(x_t) = F(x_0) + \int_0^t F_x(x_s)dx_s + \sum_{s \le t} \big\{ F(x_s) - F(x_{s-}) - F_x(x_{s-})(x_s - x_{s-}) \big\}$$

with correction terms appear at the discontinuities of x_t.

What happens when the integrator is x_t has infinite total variation ? Can we make sense of the limit of Riemann sums for some class of integrands ?

For a path x_t of infinite total variation we can do the following:
by summing p-powers of small increments for some $p > 1$ and taking supremum we define the *p-power variation* of a continuous path x_t as

$$v_t^{(p)}(x) = \sup_{\Pi} \sum_{t_i \in \Pi} |x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i}|^p$$

Since the increments are small, there is a chance that $v_t^{(p)}(x) < \infty$ even in the case were the total variation $v_t(x) = v_t^{(1)}(x) = \infty$.

In Ito calculus we consider $p = 2$ but we use a weaker notion of p-variation, where instead of taking a supremum over all finite partitions Π, we take the limit under a given sequence of partitions.

Consider a sequence of partitions $\{\Pi_n\}$ where

$$\Pi_n = \{0 = t_0^n < t_1^n < \dots, < t_k^n < \dots\}, \quad \lim_{k\to\infty} t_k^n = \infty, \quad \forall n,$$
$$\forall t > 0, \quad \Delta(\Pi_n, t) = \sup_{t_k^n \in \Pi_n} \left\{ t_{k+1}^n \wedge t - t_k^n \wedge t \right\} \to 0 \quad \text{for } n \to \infty \ .$$

$t \wedge s := \min\{t, s\}$. Usually we will use dyadic partitions

$$D_n = \left\{ t_k^n = k2^{-n} : \ k \in \mathbb{N} \right\}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}$$

Definition 14. *A continuous function $x : [0, \infty) \to \mathbb{R}$ has pathwise quadratic variation $[x, x]_t$ among the sequence $\{\Pi_n\}$, when*

$$\lim_{n\to\infty} \sum_{t_i \in \Pi_n} (x_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - x_{t_i \wedge t})^2 = [x, x]_t \quad \forall t < \infty \tag{5.1}$$

and $t \mapsto [x, x]_t$ is continuous.

Remark For each n the approximating function

$$\xi_n(t) = \sum_{t_i \in \Pi_n} (x_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - x_{t_i \wedge t})^2$$

is continuous since $t \mapsto x_t$ is continuous. However in order to show that the limit $[x, x]_t$ would be continuous, we would need the stronger uniform convergence of $\xi_n(t)$ to $[x, x]_t$ on compact intervals, which is not guaranteed, if nothing else is known about the continuous path x_t, that's why we need to include continuity in the definition of $[x, x]_t$.

Lemma 5. *When it exists, $t \mapsto [x, x]_t$ is non-decreasing with $[x, x]_0 = 0$. For a constant c, $[cx, cx]_t = c^2[x, x]_t$. In particular, the quadratic variation is reflection invariant: $[-x, -x]_t = [x, x]_t$.*

Let $u < v$ and for each n large enough , let $i_n < j_n$ such that

$$t_{i_n-1}^n < u < t_{i_n}^n < t_{j_n-1}^n < v < t_{j_n-1}^n$$

Then

$$\xi_n(v) - \xi_n(u) = (x_{i_n} - x_{t^n_{i_n-1}})^2 - (x_u - x_{t^n_{i_n-1}})^2 + \sum_{k=i_n+1}^{j_n-1} (x_{i_k} - x_{t^n_{i_k-1}})^2 + (x_v - x_{t^n_{j_n-1}})^2$$
$$\geq (x_{i_n} - x_{t^n_{i_n-1}})^2 - (x_u - x_{t^n_{i_n-1}})^2 .$$

As $n \to \infty$ where the last expression vanishes since x is uniformly continuous on compact intervals, and $[x,x]_v \geq [x,x]_u$ □

Lemma 6. *(Characterization): A continuous path $t \mapsto x_t$ has quadratic variation $[x,x]_t$ among the sequence $\{\Pi_n\}$ if and only if the sequence of discrete measures*

$$\xi_n(dt) = \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n} (x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})^2 \delta_{t_i}(dt)$$

converges weakly[1] *on compact intervals to a Radon measure*[2] *$\xi(dt)$ without atoms, which means that $\xi(\{t\}) = 0\ \forall t$.*

Proof (Sufficiency) Consider a continuous integrand y_s. Since y is uniformly continuous on the compact $[0,1]$, $\forall \varepsilon > 0$, there are $k, m, \tau_1, \dots, \tau_m$ such that the piecewise constant function

$$y^{\varepsilon}(s) = \sum_{j=1}^{m} y_{\tau_j} \mathbf{1}_{(\tau_j, \tau_{j+1}]}(s) \quad \text{satisfies} \quad \sup_{s \leq t} |y^{\varepsilon}(s) - y(s)| < \varepsilon$$

It follows

$$\left| \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n : t_i \leq t} y_{t_i} (x_{t^n_{i+1}} - x_{t^n_i})^2 - \int_0^t y_s d[x,x]_s \right| \leq$$
$$\left| \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n : t_i \leq t} y^{\varepsilon}_{t_i} (x_{t^n_{i+1}} - x_{t^n_i})^2 - \int_0^t y_s d[x,x]_s \right| + \varepsilon \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n} (x_{t^n_{i+1}} - x_{t^n_i})^2$$
$$= \left| \sum_{j=1}^{m} y_{\tau_j} \sum_{t^n_i \in \pi_n : \tau_j < t^n_i \leq \tau_{j+1} \wedge t} (x_{t^n_{i+1}} - x_{t^n_i})^2 - \int_0^t y_s d[x,x]_s \right| + \varepsilon \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n} (x_{t^n_{i+1}} - x_{t^n_i})^2$$
$$\longrightarrow \left| \sum_{j=1}^{m} y_{\tau_j} ([x,x]_{\tau_{j+1} \wedge t} - [x,x]_{\tau_j \wedge t}) - \int_0^t y_s d[x,x]_s \right| + \varepsilon [x,x]_t$$
$$= \left| \int_0^t (y^{\varepsilon}_s - y_s) d[x,x]_s \right| + \varepsilon [x,x]_t \quad \text{as } n \to \infty .$$

and as $\varepsilon \to 0$, from the definition of Riemann-Stieltjes integral it follows

$$\lim_{n \to \infty} \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n} y_{t_i} (x_{t^n_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})^2 = \int_0^t y_s d[x,x]_s ,$$

[1] Weak convergence on compacts (also called vague convergence) of $\xi_n \to \xi$ means that for all continuous functions $s \mapsto y_s$ with compact support

$$\int y_s \xi_n(ds) \to \int y_s \xi(ds)$$

[2] A Radon measure ξ lives on the Borel σ-algebra of an Hausdorff space, and it is locally finite (every point has neighbourhood of finite measure) and it is inner regular, that is $\xi(A) = \sup\{\xi(K) :\ \text{compact } K \subseteq A\}$.

and in the definition we have assumed that the non-decreasing function $t \mapsto [x,x]_t$ is continuous, the corresponding measure $\xi(dt)$ has no atoms.

Proof of necessity: We approximate pointwise the indicator $\mathbf{1}_{[0,t]}(s)$ by piecewise linear continuous functions

$$y^{\varepsilon}(s) = \begin{cases} 1 & s \le t \\ 1 + (t-s)/\varepsilon & t < s \le t+\varepsilon \\ 0 & s > t+\varepsilon \end{cases}, \quad y_{\varepsilon}(s) = \begin{cases} 1 & s \le t-\varepsilon \\ (t-s)/\varepsilon & t-\varepsilon < s \le t \\ 0 & s > t \end{cases}$$

such that

$$y_{\varepsilon}(s) \le \mathbf{1}_{[0,t]}(s) \le y^{\varepsilon}(s), \tag{5.2}$$

which implies

$$\int y_{\varepsilon}(s)\xi_n(ds) \le \xi_n([0,t]) \le \int y^{\varepsilon}(s)\xi_n(ds)$$

As $n \to \infty$

$$\int y_{\varepsilon}(s)d[x,x]_s \le \liminf_n \xi_n([0,t]) \le \limsup_n \xi_n([0,t]) \le \int y^{\varepsilon}(s)d[x,x]_s$$

which implies $\forall \varepsilon > 0$

$$\limsup_n \xi_n([0,t]) - \liminf_n \xi_n([0,t]) \le \int (y^{\varepsilon}(s) - y_{\varepsilon}(s))d[x,x]_s \le \xi((t-\varepsilon, t+\varepsilon]) \quad \forall \varepsilon > 0$$
$$\Longrightarrow \limsup_n \xi_n([0,t]) - \liminf_n \xi_n([0,t]) \le \xi(\{t\}) = 0$$

since by assumption the measure $\xi(dt)$ has no atoms □

Remark 1. *Note that for $s < t < u$,*

$$|x_u - x_s| \le |x_u - x_t| + |x_t - x_s|$$

but

$$(x_u - x_s)^2 = (x_u - x_t)^2 + (x_t - x_s)^2 + 2(x_u - x_t)(x_t - x_s)$$

which is not necessarily smaller than $(x_u - x_t)^2 + (x_t - x_s)^2$.

The quadratic variation behaves differently than the first variation, by refining the partition the approximating sum is not necessarily non-increasing.

That's the reason while in the definition of first variation we can take the supremum over all partitions, while with this definition of quadratic variation we follow a given sequence of partitions.

Remark 2. *When x_t is continuous with finite total variation in $[0,t]$, it follows that $[x,x]_t = 0$:*

$$\sum_{t_i \in \pi_n : t_i \le t} (x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})^2 \le \sup_{t_i \in \pi_n : t_i \le t} |x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i}| \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n : t_i \le t} |x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i}|$$
$$\le \sup_{t_i \in \pi_n : t_i \le t} |x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i}| v_t(x) \to 0 \quad \textit{kun } n \to \infty,$$

where $v_t(x) < \infty$ is the first variation of the path. If for some sequence of partitions $\{\Pi_n\}$ exists strictly positive quadratic variation $[x,x]_t > 0$, necessarily the first variation is $v_t(x) = \infty$.

We show that for continuous paths with quadratic variation a second order differential calculus holds.

Proposition 4. *(Föllmer 1979): Let $t \mapsto x_t$ a continuous path with pathwise quadratic variation among $\{\Pi_n\}$ with $\Delta(\Pi_n, t) \to 0$ $\forall t$, and let $F(x) \in C^2(\mathbb{R})$.*

Then Ito formula holds:

$$F(x_t) = F(x_0) + \int_0^t F_x(x_s)dx_s + \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(x_s)d[x,x]_s\ , \quad t > 0 \tag{5.3}$$

where the pathwise Ito-Föllmer integral with respect to x exists as the limit of Riemann sums among the sequence $\{\Pi_n\}$.

$$\int_0^t F_x(x_s)d\overleftarrow{x}_s := \lim_n \sum_{t \geq t_i \in \pi_n} F_x(x_{t_i})(x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})$$

This is also called pathwise forward integral.

Proof: take telescopic sums

$$F(x_t) - F(x_0) = \lim_n \sum_{t \geq t_i \in \pi_n} \big(F(x_{t_{i+1}}) - F(x_{t_i})\big)$$

and use Taylor expansion

$$\sum_{t \geq t_i \in \pi_n} \big(F(x_{t_{i+1}}) - F(x_{t_i})\big) =$$

$$\sum F_x(x_{t_i})(x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i}) + \frac{1}{2}\sum F_{xx}(x_{t_i})(x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})^2 + \sum r(x_{t_i}, x_{t_{i+1}})(x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})^2$$

where by the middle-point theorem

$$r(x_{t_i}, x_{t_{i+1}}) = \big(F_{xx}(x_i^*) - F_{xx}(x_{t_i})\Big)$$

for some $x_i^* \in (x_{t_i}, x_{t_{i+1}}]$. Note that

$$R_n(t) := \sup\big\{r(x_{t_i}, x_{t_{i+1}}) : \quad t_i \in \Pi_n \cap [0,t]\big\} \longrightarrow 0 \tag{5.4}$$

uniformly as $\Delta(\Pi_n) \to 0$ since the map $t \mapsto F_{xx}(x_t)$ is uniformly continuous on compacts.

As $n \uparrow \infty$, by definition of quadratic variation the second Riemann sums converges towards

$$\frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(x_s)d[x,x]_s$$

and the remainder term is dominated by

$$R_n(t) \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n, t_t \leq t} (x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})^2 \to 0 \cdot [x,x]_t \quad \text{when } n \to \infty\ .$$

Therefore the limit of Riemann sums among $\{\Pi_n\}$ exists, and it is given by

$$\int_0^t F_x(x_s)d\overleftarrow{x}_s := \lim_n \sum_{t\geq t_i\in\pi_n} F_x(x_{t_i})(x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})$$
$$= F(x_t) - F(x_0) - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(x_s)d[x,x]_s \qquad \square$$

Remark 3. *1. In general the existence and the value of such pathwise forward integral may depend on the particular sequence of partitions. When $[x,x]$ exists for all $\{\Pi_n\}$-sequences with $\Delta(\Pi_n)\to 0$ and its value does not depend on the particular sequence,the forward integral $\int F_x(x_s)d\overleftarrow{x}_s$ is well defined independently of the sequence of partitions.*

2. The existence of quadratic variation in the sense of weak convergence on compacts was the minimal assumption which we used to derive Ito formula.

3. We have the following extension of Ito formula: if $F(x,a)\in C^{2,1}$ and $t\mapsto a_t$ is continuous with finite variation, then

$$\int_0^t F_x(x_s,a_s)d\overleftarrow{x}_s := \lim_n \sum_{t\geq t_i\in\pi_n} F_x(x_{t_i},a_{t_i})(x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})$$
$$= F(x_t,a_t) - F(x_0,a_0) - \int_0^t F_y(x_s,a_s)da_s - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(x_s,a_s)d[x,x]_s \qquad \square$$

4. If x_t and a_t are continuous, a_t has finite first variation on compacts and x_t has quadratic variation $[x,x]_t$ among (Π^n), then $y_t=(x_t+a_t)$ has also quadratic variation among (Π^n) with $[y,y]_t=[x,x]_t$. **Proof**

$$\sum_i(\Delta x+\Delta a) = (\Delta x)^2 + (\Delta a)^2 + 2\Delta a\Delta x$$

Therefore

$$\sum_{t_i^n\in\Pi^n}(y_{t_i^n\wedge t} - y_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})^2$$
$$= \sum_{t_i^n\in\Pi^n}(x_{t_i^n\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})^2 + \sum_{t_i^n\in\Pi^n}(a_{t_i^n\wedge t} - a_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})^2$$
$$+ 2\sum_{t_i^n\in\Pi^n}(x_{t_i^n\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})(a_{t_i^n\wedge t} - a_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t}) \longrightarrow [x,x]_t\ ,$$

where since a has first variation $v_t(a)<\infty$, $[a,a]_t=0$ and

$$\left|\sum_{t_i^n\in\Pi^n}(x_{t_i^n\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})(a_{t_i^n\wedge t} - a_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})\right| \leq \max_i\left|x_{t_i^n\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t}\right|v_t(a) \longrightarrow 0\ \square$$

5. . *When $F \in C^1(\mathbb{R})$ and x is continuous with pathwise quadratic variation among $\{\Pi_n\}$, then the function $w_t := F(x_t)$ has also quadratic variation among $\{\Pi_n\}$ given by*

$$[w,w]_t = \int_0^t F_x(x_s)^2 d[x,x]_s$$

Proof: by Taylor expansion and Lemma 6:

$$\sum_{t_i^n \in \pi_n : t_i^n \le t} \{F(x_{t_{i+1}^n}) - F(x_{t_i^n})\}^2 = \sum_i F_x(x_{t_i^n})^2 \big(x_{t_{i+1}^n} - x_{t_i^n}\big)^2$$

$$+ \sum_i r\big(x_{t_i^n}, x_{t_{i+1}^n}\big)\big(x_{t_{i+1}^n} - x_{t_i^n}\big)^2 \longrightarrow \int_0^t F_x(x_s)^2 d[x,x]_s \qquad \text{as } n \to \infty$$

where for some $t_i^{*n} \in [t_i^n, t_{i+1}^n]$,

$$r\big(x_{t_i^n}, x_{t_{i+1}^n}\big) = F_x(x_{t_i^{*n}})^2 - F_x(x_{t_i^n})^2 \longrightarrow 0 \ ,$$

uniformly on the compact interval $[0,t]$ since $s \mapsto F_x(x_s)^2$ is uniformly continuous.

6. *Note that since*

$$z_t = \int_0^t F_x(x_s) d\overleftarrow{x}_s = F(x_t) - F(x_0) - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(x_s) d[x,x]_s$$

$(z_t - f(x_t))$ has finite variation on compacts and it follows that

$$[z]_t = [f(x)]_t = \int_0^t F_x(x_s)^2 d[x,x]_s$$

7. *We have defined the pathwise forward integral*

$$\int_0^t y_s d\overleftarrow{x}_s$$

for integrands $y_t = F(x_t, z_t)$ with $F \in C^{2,1}$ and z_t of finite variation. What about more general integrands ?

Let (Π_n) a sequence of partitions with $\Delta(\Pi_n) \to 0$ and $y \in C([0,t], \mathbb{R})$. Note that

$$I_t^n(y) := \sum_{t \ge t_i \in \pi_n} y_{t_i}(x_{t_{i+1}} - x_{t_i})$$

is a linear operator. When x_t has infinite total variation, in particular when $[x,x]_t > 0$ among the sequence (Π_n), the integral operator

$$I_t(y) := \int_0^t y_s d\overleftarrow{x}_s \tag{5.5}$$

it is not well defined for all continuous integrands, (I mean in the case y_t has infinite variation but it not of the form $f(x_t, t)$ with $f \in C^1$), and I_t in (5.5) is not a continuous operator on $(C([0,t], \mathbb{R}), |\cdot|_\infty)$.

Proposition 5. *(From Protter book) If for all $y \in C(\mathbb{R})$ exists*

$$I_t(y) := \lim_n I_t^n(y),$$

it follows that x_t has finite first variation and therefore $[x,x]_t = 0$.

Proof: $\forall n$ there is a continuous function $y^{(n)}(t)$ such that

$$y^{(n)}(t_i^{(n)}) = \text{sign}(x_{t_{i+1}^{(n)}} - x_{t_i^{(n)}}) \quad \forall t_i^{(n)} \in \pi_n,$$

and $|y^{(n)}|_\infty = 1$. For the operator norm

$$\| I_n \| \geq |I_n(y^{(n)})| = \sum_{t_i^{(n)} \in \Pi_n} \text{sign}\big(x_{t_i^{(n)}\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^{(n)}\wedge t}\big)\big(x_{t_i^{(n)}\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^{(n)}\wedge t}\big)$$

$$= \sum_{t_i^{(n)} \in \Pi_n} \big|x_{t_i^{(n)}\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^{(n)}\wedge t}\big|,$$

and

$$\sup_n \| I_n \| \geq v(x)_t,$$

since

$$v_t(x) = \lim_{n\to\infty} \sum_{t_i \in \pi_n} |x_{t_i\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}|$$

for any sequence of partitions with $\Delta(\Pi_n) \to 0$.

If $\forall y \in C(\mathbb{R})$ there exists $I(y) = \lim_n I_n(y) < \infty$ among $\{\Pi_n\}$, necessarily $\sup_n |I_n(y)| < \infty$, and by the Banach Steinhaus theorem[3] from functional analysis it follows that $\sup_n \| I_n \| < \infty$, which implies $v(x)_t < \infty$. Therefore if x_t is a continuous path with infinite total variation $v_t(x) = +\infty$ on $[0,t]$, we cannot define the pathwise integral $\int_0^t y_s dx_s$ for all continuous integrands y_s. However it may be possible to define the pathwise integral on some subspace of integrands.

5.0.1 Ito-Föllmer calculus for random paths

Definition 15. *Let $(X_t(\omega) : t \geq 0)$ a stochastic process with almost surely continuous paths defined on the probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$. We say that X has stochastic quadratic variation process $([X,X]_t(\omega) : t \geq 0)$ when for all sequence of finite partitions $\{\Pi_n\}$ with $\Delta(\Pi_n, t) \to 0$*

$$\sum_{t_i \in \Pi_n} (X_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - X_{t_i\wedge t})^2 \xrightarrow{P} [X,X]_t$$

with convergence in probability

[3] Let's recall Banach-Steinhaus theorem: Let $(I_\nu : \nu \in J)$ a family of linear continuous operators, $I_\nu : X_1 \longrightarrow X_2$, where $(X_i, |\cdot|_{X_i})$, $i = 1,2$ are normed-spaces. If $\forall y \in_{X_1}$,

$$\sup_{\nu \in J} |I_\nu(y)|_{X_2} < \infty,$$

then $\sup_{\nu\in J} \| I_\nu \| < \infty$, where $\| I_\nu \| := \sup\big\{|I_\nu(y)|_{X_2} / |y|_{X_1} : y \in X_1\big\}$ is the strong operator-norm.

It follows that for any sequence of finite partitions $\{\Pi_n\}$ with $\Delta(\Pi_n) \to 0$ there is a deterministic subsequence[4] $\{\Pi_{n(m)}\}$ such that (first for all $t \in \mathbb{Q} \cap [0, \infty)$ and then by continuity of $[X, X]$ for all $t \geq 0$)

$$\sum_{t \geq t_i \in \Pi_{n(m)}} (X_{t_{i+1}}(\omega) - X_{t_i}(\omega))^2 \to [X, X]_t(\omega) \quad P\text{-almost surely } \omega \tag{5.6}$$

i.e. the stochastic quadratic variation and the pathwise quadratic variation among $\{\Pi_{n(m)}\}$ coincide P-almost surely. We also obtain a stochastic Ito formula where the stochastic forward integral is defined as limit in probability of Riemann sums:

Proposition 6. *Let $X_t(\omega)$ be a stochastic process which has continuous paths P-almost surely and with stochastic quadratic variation in the sense of convergence in probability. Then Ito formula (5.3) hold where the stochastic forward integral is defined as limit in probability of Riemann sums for any sequence of partitions (Π^n) with $\Delta(\Pi^n, t) \to 0$:*

$$P - \lim_{n \to \infty} \sum_{t_i^n \in \Pi^n} F_x(X_{t_{i-1}^n})\big(X_{t_i^n \wedge t} - X_{t_{i-1}^n \wedge t}\big) \tag{5.7}$$

$$= \int_0^t F_x(X_s) d\overleftarrow{X}_s = F(X_t) - F(X_0) - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t F_{xx}(X_s) d[X, X]_s \tag{5.8}$$

Proof For any sequence of partitions (Π^n), and any subsequence (n_k), there is a further subsequence n_{k_ℓ} such that P-almost surely

$$\sum_{t_i \in \Pi^{n_{k_\ell}}} \big(X_{t_i \wedge t} - X_{t_{i-1} \wedge t}\big)^2 \longrightarrow [X, X]_t.$$

in pathwise sense. With probability ($P = 1$) Ito formula (5.3) holds pathwise where the pathwise forward integral

$$\lim_{\ell \to \infty} \sum_{t_i \in \Pi^{n_{k_\ell}}} F_x(X_{t_{i-1}})\big(X_{t_i \wedge t} - X_{t_{i-1} \wedge t}\big)$$
$$= \int_0^t F_x(X_s) d\overleftarrow{X}_s = F(X_t) - F(X_0) - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t F_{xx}(X_s) d[X, X]_s$$

is defined with respect to the sequence of partitions $\big(\Pi^{n_{k_\ell}}\big)$, and it does not depend on the partitions (Π^n). The stochastic Ito formula (5.7) follows by the subsequence characterization of the convergence in probabiity □

Consider dyadic partitions

$$D_n = \{t_k^n = k2^{-n} : \ k = 0, \dots, n2^n\}$$

Proposition 7. *(by Paul Lévy) Brownian motion has P-almost surely pathwise quadratic variation $[B, B]_t = t$ among the dyadic sequence $\{D_n\}$, which is also the stochastic quadratic variation in the sense of convergence in probability.*

---

[4] Recall that $\xi_n \overset{P}{\to} 0$ (in probability) if and only if for every subsequence (n_k) there is a further subsequence (n_{k_ℓ}) such that $\xi_{n_{k_\ell}}(\omega) \to 0$ P-almost surely. The P-null set where convergence fails may depend on the subsequence.

Proof: the variance of the approximating sums is

$$E\left(\left\{\sum_{t_k^n\le t}(B_{t_{k+1}^n}-B_{t_k}^n)^2-(t_{k+1}^n-t_k^n)\right\}^2\right)=\sum_{t_k^n\le t}E\big(\{(B_{t_{k+1}^n}-B_{t_k}^n)^2-(t_{k+1}^n-t_k^n)\}^2\big)$$

(since increments are independent the cross-product terms have zero expectation).

$$=\sum_{t_k^n\le t}\left\{E(\{\Delta B_{t_k^n}\}^4)+(\Delta t_k^n)^2-2(\Delta t_k^n)E(\{\Delta B_{t_k^n}\}^2)\right\}=$$

$$2\sum_{t_k^n\le t}(t_{k+1}^n-t_k^n)^2=2\lfloor t2^n\rfloor 2^{-2n}\le 2t2^{-n}$$

Let $\varepsilon>0$ and

$$A_n^\varepsilon=\left\{\omega:|t-\sum_{t_k^n\le t}(B_{t_{k+1}}^n(\omega)-B_{t_k}^n(\omega))^2|>\varepsilon\right\}$$

by Chebychev inequality

$$P(A_n^\varepsilon)\le 2t2^{-n}\varepsilon^{-2}$$

Therefore

$$\sum_n P(A_n^\varepsilon)\le\varepsilon^{-2}4t<\infty$$

Applying Borel Cantelli lemma, $\forall\varepsilon>0$

$$P\big(\limsup_n A_n^\varepsilon\big)=0$$

Taking $\varepsilon=1/m,\ m\in\mathbb{N}$ and countable intersection of the complements

$$P\left(\bigcap_{m\ge0}\bigcup_{k\ge0}\bigcap_{n\ge k}A_n^{1/m}\right)=1$$

which is the probability that the path $t\mapsto B_t(\omega)$ has pathwise quadratic variation $[B,B]_t=t$ when we take the limit among the dyadic sequence.

Remark 4. *1. Essentially we used*

$$\sum_n\left(\sum_{t_k^n\le t}(t_{k+1}^n-t_k^n)^2\right)<\infty$$

In order to obtain almost sure convergence starting from convergence in probability, it is enough to have

$$\sum_{n\in\mathbb{N}}\Delta(\Pi_n,t)<\infty$$

2. The set of measure zero where convergence fails may well depend on the sequence of partitions. Since the collection of partition sequences is uncountable, we don't get almost sure convergence if we take supremum over partitions.

When the partitions are nested $\Pi^n \subseteq \Pi^{n+1}$, we have also almost sure convergence in Proposition 7:

Proposition 8. *(In Revuz and Yor, Continuous martingales and Brownian motion,Proposition 2.12) . Brownian motion has P-almost surely pathwise quadratic variation $[B,B]_t = t$ among any sequence of refining partitions $\{\Pi_n\}$, with $\Pi_n \subseteq \Pi_{n+1}$ and $\Delta(\Pi_n) \to 0$.*

Proof. It is enough to consider the canonical Brownian motion $B_t(\omega) = \omega_t$, defined on the space $\Omega = \mathcal{C}_0([0,1] \to \mathbb{R})$ of continuous functions f with $f(0) = 0$.

Let $\Pi^n = \{0 = t_0^n < \cdots < t_k^n < t\} \subseteq \Pi^{n+1}$, and define

$$M_0(\omega) := B_t(\omega)^2, \quad M_{-n}(\omega) := \sum_{t_i^n \in \Pi^n} \big(B_{t_i^n \wedge t}(\omega) - B_{t_{i-1}^n \wedge t}(\omega) \big)^2, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}.$$

Given Π^n consider $\epsilon^n = (\epsilon_0^n, \epsilon_1^n, \ldots, \epsilon_k^n)$ where $\epsilon_i^n \in \{-1, 1\}$ are binary variables. For such Π^n and ε^n consider the transformation $\omega \mapsto (\theta_{\varepsilon^n}\omega) \in \Omega$ such that

$$(\theta_{\varepsilon^n}\omega)_{t_i^n \wedge t} - (\theta_{\varepsilon^n}\omega)_{t_{i-1}^n \wedge t} = \big(\omega_{t_i^n \wedge t} - \omega_{t_{i-1}^n \wedge t} \big) \varepsilon_i^n \ .$$

It means that in each interval $\big(t_{i-1}^n \wedge t, t_i^n \wedge t \big]$ the Brownian motion starting from the right side is reflected when $\varepsilon_i^n = -1$.

Define $\mathcal{G}_0 = \mathcal{F} = \sigma(\mathcal{C})$, and for $n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$\mathcal{G}_{-n} = \sigma \big\{ X \text{ random variables such that} X(\omega) = X(\theta_{\varepsilon^n}\omega) \quad \forall \varepsilon^n \big\}$$

that is the smallest σ-algebra which contains the random variables invariant under the trasformations $\omega \mapsto \theta_{\varepsilon^n}\omega$ for all possible ε^n corresponding to the partition Π^n.

Note that since $\Pi^n \subseteq \Pi^{(n+1)}$ a path trasformation based on the partition Π^n corresponds to a path transformation based on the next partition $\Pi^{(n+1)}$. Since the set of these path transformations grows with n, the corresponding set of transformation invariant random variables becomes smaller and smaller, and $\mathcal{G}_{-n} \supseteq \mathcal{G}_{-(n+1)}$. These σ-algebrae form a filtration $\mathbb{G} = (\mathcal{G}_{-n} : n \in \mathbb{N})$ indexed by negative integers.

Note also that

$$M_{-n}(\omega) = M_{-n}(\theta_{\varepsilon^n}\omega) \quad \forall \varepsilon^n$$

is invariant under all θ_{ε^n} transformations, and it is $\mathcal{G}_{-n}$ measurable.

We show that

$$M_{-n} = E\big(B_t^2 \big| \mathcal{G}_{-n} \big), \quad n \in \mathbb{N}$$

which is an uniformly integrable $\mathbb{G}$-martingale.

We show this in details for $n = 1$, and by using the independece of increments the same argument works $\forall n$. For $0 = t_0^1 < t_1^1 < t$, let $\Delta B^{'} = B_{t_1^1}$ and $\Delta B^{''} = (B_t - B_{t_1^1})$, with $B_t = (\Delta B^{'} + \Delta B^{''})$

$$\begin{aligned} E\big(B_1^2 \big| \mathcal{G}_{-1} \big) &= (\Delta B^{'})^2 + (\Delta B^{''})^2 + 2E\big(\Delta B^{'} \Delta B^{''} \big| (\Delta B^{'})^2, (\Delta B^{''})^2 \big) \\ &= M_{-1} + 2E\big(\Delta B^{'} \big| (\Delta B^{'})^2 \big) E\big(\Delta B^{''} \big| (\Delta B^{''})^2 \big) = M_{-1} \end{aligned}$$

where by symmetry

$$P\big(\Delta B = \pm\sqrt{(\Delta B)^2}\big|(\Delta B)^2\big) = 1/2 \text{ and } E\big(\Delta B\big|(\Delta B)^2\big) = 0 \,.$$

By Doob backward martingale convergence theorem it follows that $\exists\, M_{-\infty}(\omega) = \lim_{n\to\infty} M_{-n}(\omega)$ P-almost surely and in $L^1(P)$. However we know already that $\lim_{n\to\infty} M_{-n} = t$ in $L^2(P)$ sense (Proposition 7), therefore the P-almost sure limit is $M_{-\infty}(\omega) = t$. □

5.0.2 Cross-variation

Definition 16. *Let x_t, y_t continuous paths with pathwise quadratic variations $[x,x]_t$ and $[y,y]_t$ among the sequence of partitions (Π^n) with $\Delta(\Pi^n,t) = 0$ $\forall t$.*

We define their pathwise cross-variation among the sequence of partitions (Π^n) as

$$[x,y]_t = [y,x]_t = \lim_{n\to\infty} \sum_{t_i^n\in\Pi^n} (x_{t_i^n\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})(y_{t_i^n\wedge t} - y_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})$$

when it exists and $t\mapsto [x,y]_t$ is continuous.

Lemma 7. *When the continuous paths $(x_t + y_t)$ and $(x_t - y_t)$ have pathwise quadratic variation among the sequence of partitions (Π^n) , their cross variation among (Π^n) exists and it is given by the polarization formula.*

$$[x,y]_t = \frac{1}{4}\big([x+y,x+y]_t - [x-y,x-y]_t\big) \,. \tag{5.9}$$

Therefore the cross-variation has finite variation on compacts since it is the difference of two non-decreasing functions.

Proof Observe that (5.9) for the approximating sums before taking limits, since

$$\Delta x\Delta y = \frac{1}{2}\big((\Delta x+\Delta y)^2 - (\Delta x - \Delta y)^2\big)$$

Lemma 8. *The continuous path x_t, y_t have cross-variation $[x,y]_t$ among (Π^n), the sequence of measures*

$$\xi^n(dt) = \sum_{t_i\in\Pi_n} \delta_{t_{i-1}^n}(dt)(x_{t_i^n\wedge t} - x_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})(y_{t_i^n\wedge t} - y_{t_{i-1}^n\wedge t})$$

converges vaguely to the measure $\xi(dt)$ with $\xi((s,t]) = [x,y]_t - [x,y]_s$.

Proof By polarization and Lemma 6.

Proposition 9. *When x_t, y_t are continuous with pathwise quadratic variations $[x,x]_t$,$[y,y]_t$ and cross variation $[x,y]_t$ among the sequence of partitions (Π^n) and $f(r,s)\in C^{2.2}$, the following Ito Föllmer formula holds:*

$$f(x_t,y_t) = f(x_0,y_0) + \int_0^t \nabla f(x_s,y_s)\begin{pmatrix} d\overleftarrow{x} \\ d\overleftarrow{y}\end{pmatrix}$$
$$+\frac{1}{2}\int_0^t f_{xx}(x_s,y_s)d[x.x]_s + \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t f_{xx}(x_s,y_s)d[x.x]_s + \int_0^t f_{xy}(x_s,y_s)d[x,y]_s$$

where

$$\int_0^t \nabla f(x_s,y_s)\begin{pmatrix} d\overleftarrow{x} \\ d\overleftarrow{y}\end{pmatrix} = \left(\int_0^t f_x(x_s,y_s)d\overleftarrow{x}_s + \int_0^t f_y(x_s,y_s)d\overleftarrow{y}_s\right) =$$
$$\lim_{n\to\infty}\sum_{t_i^n\in\Pi^n}\Big\{ f_x(x_{t_{i-1}^n},y_{t_{i-1}^n})\big(x_{t_i^n}-x_{t_{i-1}^n}\big) + f_y(x_{t_{i-1}^n},y_{t_{i-1}^n})\big(y_{t_i^n}-y_{t_{i-1}^n}\big)\Big\}$$

Remark Note that at this stage we are not able to define separately the pathwise integrals

$$\int_0^t f_x(x_s,y_s)d\overleftarrow{x}_s \text{ and } \int_0^t f_y(x_s,y_s)d\overleftarrow{y}_s \ .$$

when $[x]_t[y]_t > 0$, but their sum is well defined.

Proof As before, use a telescopic sums and a second order Taylor approximation, together with Lemma 8 □

Proposition 10. *For x_t,y_t continuous with respective quadratic variations $[x]_t$, $[y]_t$, and cross variation $[x,y]_t$ among the sequence of partitions (Π_n), for $F(x), G(x) \in C^2$, the Ito-Föllmer integrals*

$$w_t = \int_0^t F_x(x_s)dx_s, z_t = \quad \int_0^t G_x(y_s)dy_s$$

have also cross-quadratic variation among the sequence of partitions (Π_n), given by

$$\left[\int_0^\cdot F_x(x_s)dx_s, \quad \int_0^\cdot F_x(y_s)dy_s\right]_t \big[F(x.,G(y.)\big]_t = \int_0^t F_x(x_s)G_y(y_s)d[x,y]_s$$

Proof *as in Remark* (5).

Proposition 11. *Let B_t and W_t independent Brownian motions. Then P-almost surely their pathwise cross-variation among the dyadic partitions (D^n) exists, and $[B,W]_t = 0$.*

Proof By definition $(B_t+W_t)/\sqrt{2}$ and $(B_t-W_t)/\sqrt{2}$ are Brownian motions. Therefore $[B+W,B+W]_t = [B-W,B-W]_t = 2t$ and the result follows by polarization.

5.0.3 Pathwise Stratonovich calculus

If in the approximating Riemann sums we evaluate the integrand at the mid-point rather than in the left point we obtain

$$\sum_{t_i\in D_n:t_i\le t} F_x(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i}) =$$
$$= \sum F_x(B_{t_i})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i}) + \sum (F_x(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}) - F_x(B_{t_i}))(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i})$$
$$= \sum F_x(B_{t_i})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i}) + \sum F_{xx}(B_{t_i})(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}-B_{t_i})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i}) +$$
$$+ \sum r(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}, B_{t_i})(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}-B_{t_i})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i})$$
$$= \sum F_x(B_{t_i})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i}) + \sum F_{xx}(B_{t_i})(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}-B_{t_i})^2 +$$
$$+ \sum F_{xx}(B_{t_i})(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}-B_{t_i})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}) +$$
$$+ \sum r(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}, B_{t_i})(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2}-B_{t_i})(B_{t_{i+1}}-B_{t_i})$$

Lemma 9. *For the Brownian path*

$$\sum_{t_i\in D_n} \big(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2\wedge t} - B_{t_i\wedge t}\big)^2 \to \frac{1}{2}[B,B]_t = \frac{1}{2}t\ , \tag{5.10}$$
$$\sum_{t_i\in D_n} \big(B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2\wedge t} - B_{t_i\wedge t}\big)\big(B_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - B_{(t_{i+1}+t_i)/2\wedge t}\big) \to 0\ , \tag{5.11}$$

Proof: Hint: among the lines of Proposition (7).

It follows that the Riemannin sums among the dyadics converge P-a.s. among the dyadics (D_n) to the pathwise Stratonovich integral

$$\int_0^t F_x(B_s)\circ dB_s := \int_0^t F_x(B_s)d\overleftarrow{B}_s + \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(B_s)ds$$
$$= F(B_t) - F(B_0) - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(B_s)ds + \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(B_s)ds = F(B_t)-F(B_0)\ ,$$

which follows the ordinary first order calculus. By evaluating in the Riemann sums the integrand at the right point we obtain the pathwise *backward integral*

$$\int_0^t F_x(B_s)d\overrightarrow{B}_s = \lim_{n\to\infty}\sum_{t_i^n\in D_n} F_x(B_{t_{i+1}^n})(B_{t_{i+1}^n\wedge t} - B_{t_i^n})$$
$$= F(B_t) - F(B_0) + \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t F_{xx}(B_s)ds = \int_0^t F_x(B_s)d\overleftarrow{B}_s + \int_0^t F_{xx}(B_s)ds$$

Proof: exercise.

References H. Föllmer, "Calcul d Ito sans probabilites" (1980). Séminaire de Probabilités XV, pp 143-149 Springer

D. Sondermann, " Intoduction to stochastic calculus for finance " Springer.

Chapter 6

Martingale theory

6.1 Martingales

Definition 17. *Let $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ a probability space. A filtration is an increasing collection of σ-algebrae $(\mathcal{F}_t : t \in T)$ where $T = \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{R}^+, \mathbb{Z}, \mathbb{R}$ such that for all $s \leq t$ $\mathcal{F}_s \subseteq \mathcal{F}_t \subseteq \mathcal{F}$*

Definition 18. *A stochastic process $(X_t : t \in T)$ is adapted to the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t : t \in T)$, if X_t is $\mathcal{F}_t$-meaasurable for all $t \in T$.*

Definition 19. *A random variable $\tau(\omega) \in T = \mathbb{R}^+, \mathbb{N}$ is a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping time if*

$$\{\omega : \tau(\omega) \leq t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t \quad \forall t \in T$$

Equivalently the counting process $N_t(\omega) := \mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) \leq t)$ is adapted to the filtation.

Definition 20. *Let $\tau(\omega)$ an $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping time, the stopped σ-algebra is defined as*

$$\mathcal{F}_\tau := \big\{ A \in \mathcal{F} : A \cap \{\tau \leq t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t \quad \forall t \in T \big\}.$$

Exercise 3.

- *Check that $\mathcal{F}_\tau$ is a σ-algebra.*
- *If $0 \leq \sigma(\omega) \leq \tau(\omega)$ $\forall \omega$ where σ, τ are $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping times then $\mathcal{F}_\sigma \subseteq \mathcal{F}_\tau$*

  Proof of $\mathcal{F}_\sigma \subseteq \mathcal{F}_\tau$:
  $A \in \mathcal{F}_\sigma \iff A \cap \{\sigma \leq t\} \in \mathcal{F}_\tau$, $\forall t \geq 0$,
  Also $\{\tau \leq t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$, which implies

$$A \cap \{\tau \leq t\} A \cap \{\sigma \leq t\} \cap \{\tau \leq t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$$

Definition 21. *A (sub,super)-martingale with respect to the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t \in T}$ is an adapted and integrable process $(X_t : t \in T) \subseteq L^1(P)$ which satisfies the martingale property: for $s \leq t$*

$$E_P(M_t | \mathcal{F}_s) = M_s$$

(respectively $\geq, \leq$)

Note the martingale property depends both on the probability measure and on the filtration.

Exercise 4. *Let* $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq L^1(P)$ *independent random variables with* $E(X_t) = 0$*, and* $\mathcal{F}_t = \sigma(X_1, X_2, \dots, X_t)$ *Then* $M_t = (X_1 + \dots + X_t)$ *is a* $(\mathcal{F}_t)$*-martingale*

Exercise 5. *Let* $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq L^1(P)$ *independent random variables with* $E(X_t) = 1$*, and* $\mathcal{F}_t = \sigma(X_1, X_2, \dots, X_t)$ *Then* $M_t = (X_1 \times \dots \times X_t)$ *is a* $(\mathcal{F}_t)$*-martingale*

Exercise 6. *Let* $(B_t(\omega) : t \geq 0)$ *a Brownian motion. Consider the filtration* $\mathbb{F} = \{\mathcal{F}_t^B : t \geq 0\}$ *generated by* B *with* $\mathcal{F}_t^B = \sigma(B_s : 0 \leq s \leq t)$ *Then*

$$(B_t : t \geq 0),\ (B_t^2 - t : t \geq 0),\ \text{and}\ \big(\exp(\theta B_t - \theta^2 t/2\big) : t \geq 0\big)$$

are $\mathbb{F}$*-martingales.*

Exercise 7. *Let* $X_n(\omega) \in \mathbb{R}^d$ *a discrete time Markov chain with initial distribution* π *and transition kernel* K

Define the operator $(Kf)(x) = \int_{\mathbb{R}^d} f(y)K(y, dx) = E_x(f(X_1))$

Check that this is a martingale

$$M_t(f) = \sum_{s=1}^{t} (f(X_s) - (Kf)(X_{s-1}))$$

Taking telescopic sums

$$f(X_t) = f(X_0) + \sum_{s=1}^{t} (f(X_s) - f(X_{s-1}) =$$

$$f(X_0) + \sum_{s=1}^{t} (f(X_s) - Kf(X_{s-1}) + \sum_{s=1}^{t} ((Kf)(X_{s-1}) - f(X_{s-1}))$$

$$= f(X_0) + M_t(f) + A_t(f)$$

(decomposition into martingale and predictable part)

Definition 22. *A process* $(Y_t(\omega) : t \in \mathbb{N})$ *is predictable with respect to the discrete-time filtration* $(\mathcal{F}_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$*, if* Y_t *is* $\mathcal{F}_t$*-measurable for all* $t \in T$*.*

Proposition 12. *Let* (X_t) *be a martingale and* (Y_t) *a predictable process in the discrete-time filtration* $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$*. Define the martingale transform*

$$M_t(\omega) = \sum_{s=1}^{t} Y_s(M_s - M_{s-1})$$

When $E(|Y_s \Delta M_s|) < \infty\ \forall s \in T$*,* (M_t) *is a martingale.*

Proof From the definition we see that M_t is adapted and integrability follows from triangle inequality. We check the martingale property:

$$E_P(M_t - M_{t-1}|\mathcal{F}_{t-1}) = E_P(Y_t(X_t - X_{t-1})|\mathcal{F}_{t-1}) = Y_t E_P(X_t - X_{t-1}|\mathcal{F}_{t-1}) = 0$$

where we use predictability of Y_t together with the definition of conditional expectation.

In order to check integrability it is enough to use Hölder inequality,

$$E(|Y_s \Delta M_s|) \leq \| Y_s \|_{L_p} \| \Delta M_s \|_{L_q}$$

for conjugate exponents $p, q \in [1, +\infty]$, $p^{-1} + q^{-1} = 1$.

Corollary 6. *Let $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ an $\mathbb{F}$-martingale, and $\tau(\omega) \in \mathbb{N}$ a $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time. Then the stopped process*

$$M_t^\tau(\omega) = M_{t\wedge\tau}(\omega) = M_0 + \sum_{s=1} \mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) \geq s)\big(M_s(\omega) - M_{s-1}(\omega)\big)$$

is a $\mathbb{F}$-martingale.

Proof: since $\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) \geq s) = \mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) > s-1) \in \mathcal{F}_{s-1}$, we see that $M_{t\wedge\tau}$ is the martingale transform of a bounded $\mathbb{F}$-predictable integrand.

6.1.1 Martingale convergence

Theorem 6. *(Doob's forward convergence) Let $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ a supermartingale with*

$$\sup_{t\in\mathbb{N}} E_P(X_t^-) < \infty.$$

Notation: $x^\pm = \max(\pm x, 0)$.

Then

$$\lim_{t\to\infty} X_t(\omega) = X_\infty(\omega) \qquad P\text{-almost surely}$$

with $X_\infty(\omega) \in L^1(\Omega)$

Notes : although $X_\infty(\omega) \in L^1(\Omega)$ we don't have necessarily convergence in $L^1(P)$ sense. Joseph Leo Doob(1910-2004) American probabilist, is the father of martingale theory.

Proof Note first that by the supermartingale propery, $\forall t \in \mathbb{N}$

$$E(X_t^+) \leq E(X_0) + E(X_t^-)$$

so that

$$\sup_t E(X_t^+) \leq E(X_0) + \sup_t E(X_t^-)$$

where $E(|X_0|) < \infty$, so that the sequence $(X_t)_{t\in\mathbb{N}}$ is bounded in $L^1(P)$.

Given $a < b$, we define a sequence of stopping times

$$\sigma_0(\omega) = \inf\{s \in \mathbb{N} : X_s(\omega) < a\},\ \tau_i(\omega) = \inf\{s > \sigma_i(\omega) : X_s(\omega) \geq b\},$$
$$\sigma_i(\omega) = \inf\{s > \tau_{i-1}(\omega) : X_s(\omega) < a\},\ i \geq 1$$

We have $0 \leq \sigma_i < \tau_i < \sigma_{i+1} < \dots$, To check that these are stopping times, note that for each $t \in \mathbb{N}$ the events

$$\{\omega : \sigma_i(\omega) \leq t\} \quad \text{and} \quad \{\omega : \tau_i(\omega) \leq t\}$$

are $\mathcal{F}_t$-measurable since they depend on the trajectory of the $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted process X_t up to time t.

Define the investement strategy

$$C_t(\omega) = \begin{cases} 1 & t \in (\sigma_i, \tau_i] \qquad \text{for some } i \in \mathbb{N} \\ 0 & t \in (\tau_i, \sigma_{i+1}] \end{cases}$$

Note that since τ_i and σ_i are stopping times, for all $t \in N$

$$\{C_t = 1\} = \bigcup_{i \in \mathbb{N}} \{t \in (\sigma_i, \tau_i]\} = \bigcup_{i \in \mathbb{N}} \{\sigma_i \le (t-1)\} \cap \{\tau_i \le (t-1)\}^c \in \mathcal{F}_{t-1}$$

Since $C_t(\omega) \in \{0,1\}$ is a non-negative and bounded predictable process, it follows that the martingale transform

$$Y_t(\omega) = \sum_{s=1}^{t} C_s(\omega) \Delta X_s$$

has the supermartingale property.

Note that

$$Y_t \ge (b-a) U_{[a,b]}([0,t]) - (X_t - a)^-,$$

where $U_{(a,b)}([0,t])$ is the number of upcrossings of the interval $[a,b]$ in the time interval $[0,t]$ by the X process, meaning that each time X starts below a and crosses $[a,b]$ ending up above b.

By taking expectation, since $E(Y_t) \le E(Y_0) = 0$ from the supermartingale property, we obtain *Doob upcrossing inequality*

$$E_P\big(U_{[a,b]}([0,t])\big) \le \frac{1}{(b-a)} E_P\big((X_t - a)^-\big)$$

Now since $U_{[a,b]}([0,t])$ is non-decreasing, for every ω exists

$$U_{[a,b]}([0,\infty), \omega) := \lim_{t \to \infty} U_{[a,b]}([0,t]) \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{+\infty\}$$

and by monotone convergence theorem, since

$$(X_t - a)^- = \max(a - X_t, 0) \le |a| + X_t^-$$

we obtain

$$E_P\big(U_{[a,b]}([0,\infty),\omega)\big) = \lim_{t \to \infty} E_P\big(U_{[a,b]}([0,t])\big) \le \frac{1}{(b-a)} \left(|a| + \sup_{t \in \mathbb{N}} E_P(X_t^-) \right) < \infty$$

In particular $U_{[a,b]}([0,\infty),\omega) < \infty$ P-almost surely. Since

$$N = \big\{\omega : \liminf_{t \to \infty} X_t(\omega) \ne \limsup_{t \to \infty} X_t(\omega)\big\}$$
$$= \bigcup_{a<b \in Q} \{\omega : \liminf_{t \to \infty} X_t(\omega) \le a < b \le \limsup_{t \to \infty} X_t(\omega)\} = \bigcup_{a<b \in \mathbb{Q}} \big\{U_{[a,b]}([0,\infty),\omega) = \infty\big\},$$

we see that $P(N) = 0$ since is the countable union of null sets, which means that P-almost surely $(X_t(\omega))_{t \in \mathbb{N}}$ is a converging sequence. For all $\omega \in \Omega$ we set

$X_\infty(\omega) := \limsup_{t\to\infty} X_t(\omega)$, and we have $X_t(\omega) \to X_\infty(\omega)$ P-a.s. Note that a priori $X_\infty(\omega) \in [-\infty, \infty]$.

By using Fatou lemma

$$E(|X_\infty|) = E(\liminf_t |X_t|) \le \liminf_t E(|X_t|) \le \limsup_t E(|X_t|) \le \sup_t E(|X_t|) < \infty,$$

since

$$|X_t| = X_t + 2X_t^- \implies E(|X_t|) = E(X_t) + 2E(X_t^-) \le E(X_0) + 2\sup_t E(X_t^-)$$

by the supermartingale property. In particular, since $X \in L^1(P)$, $|X_\infty(\omega)| < \infty$ P-almost surely □

Corollary 7. *A non-negative supermartingale $X_t \ge 0$ has almost surely an integrable limit X_∞ with $E_P(X_\infty) \le E_P(X_t)$, $\forall t < \infty$.*

Proof For all $t \in \mathbb{N}$

$$E_P(|X_t|) \le E_P(X_t) = E_P\big(E_P(X_t|\mathcal{F}_0)\big) \le E_P(X_0) = E_P(|X_0|)$$

so that L^1 boundedness follows for free and Doob convergence theorem applies □

Corollary 8. *Let $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ a submartingale with $E_P(X_t^+) < \infty$. Then for P almost all ω $\exists \lim_{t\to\infty} X_t(\omega) = X_\infty(\omega) \in L^1(P)$.*

Proof Apply the theorem to the supermartingale $(-X_t)$

Remark 5. *Even when $\sup_{t\in\mathbb{N}} E_P(|X_t|) < \infty$, and $X_n(\omega) \to X_\infty(\omega)$ P-a.s. with $X_\infty \in L^1(P)$, it does not follow that $X_n \overset{L^1(P)}{\longrightarrow} X_\infty$. In order get convergence in $L^1(P)$ we need uniform integrability of $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$.*

6.2 Uniform integrability

Definition 23. *A collection of random variables $\mathcal{C} \subseteq L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$. is* **uniformly integrable (UI)** *with respect to P when*

$$\lim_{K\to\infty} \sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E_P\big(|X|\mathbf{1}(|X| > K)\big) = \int_{\{\omega:|X(\omega)|>K\}} |X(\omega)|P(d\omega) \longrightarrow 0 \text{ when } K \to \infty$$

Lemma 10. *A finite collection $\mathcal{C} = \{X_1, X_2, \dots, X_M\} \subset L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P), M \in \mathbb{N}$ is uniformly integrable. Proof: From the monotone convergence theorem it follows that a single random variable $X \in L^1(P)$ is uniformly integrable. A finite set $\{X_1, \dots, X_M\} \subset L^1(P)$ is uniformly integrable since*

$$\max_{k=1,\dots M} |X_k(\omega)| \le \sum_{k=1}^N |X_k(\omega)| \in L^1(P)$$

Remark 6. *To show that a sequence $\{X_n\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is uniformly integrable it is enough to find $Y \in L^1(P)$ such that*

$$\sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} |X_n(\omega)| \le Y(\omega)$$

Lemma 11. *$X \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$, if and only if $\forall \varepsilon > 0\ \exists \delta$, such that $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}$,*

$$P(A) < \delta \Longrightarrow E_P\big(|X|\mathbf{1}_A\big) < \varepsilon$$

Proof, sufficiency: $\forall \omega$,

$$Y^{(K)}(\omega) := |X(\omega)|\mathbf{1}(|X(\omega)| \le K) \uparrow |X(\omega)|$$

and by (10)

$$E_P(|X|) - E_P(Y^{(K)}) = \int_{\{\omega:|X(\omega)|>K\}} |X(\omega)|P(d\omega) < \varepsilon$$

for K large enough so that $P(\{\omega : |X(\omega)| > K\}) < \delta$. It follows that

$$E_P(|X|) \le E_P(Y^{(K)}) + \varepsilon \le K + \varepsilon < \infty$$

Proof of necessity, by contradiction: otherwise there would be $\varepsilon > 0$ and a sequence of events $\{A_n : n \in \mathbb{N}\} \subseteq \mathcal{F}$ such that

$$P(A_n) < 2^{-n} \Longrightarrow E_P\big(|X|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}\big) \ge \varepsilon > 0$$

Denote $A = \limsup_n A_n$. Since

$$\sum_n P(A_n) \le \sum_n 2^{-n} = 1 < \infty$$

$P(A) = 0$ by the Borel Cantelli lemma.

Let $B_n = \bigcup_{k \ge n} A_k$. By definition $A_n \subseteq B_n \downarrow A$, which means

$$|X(\omega)|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}(\omega) \le |X(\omega)|\mathbf{1}_{B_n}(\omega) \downarrow |X(\omega)|\mathbf{1}_A(\omega) \quad \forall \omega$$

where the random variables above are integrable since $X \in L^1(P)$. It follows from the sufficiency part of the proof that

$$0 < \varepsilon \le E_P(|X|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}) \le E_P(|X|\mathbf{1}_{B_n}) \downarrow E_P(|X|\mathbf{1}_A) = 0$$

since $P(A) = 0 \quad \square$

Theorem 7. *Characterization of convergence in $L^1(P)$.*
Consider $\{X_n : n \in \mathbb{N}\} \subseteq L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$, $n \in \mathbb{N}$ ja $X \in L^0(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$.
$X_n \stackrel{P}{\to} X$ and $\{X_n : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ is uniformly integrable,
if and only if $X_n \stackrel{L^1}{\to} X \in L^1(P)$,

Proof (necessity): When $X_n \stackrel{P}{\to} X$ in probability, there is a deterministic subsequence $n(k)$ such that $X_{n(k)}(\omega) \to X(\omega)$ P-almost surely. By Fatou lemma

$$E_P(|X|) = E_P(\liminf_k |X_{n(k)}|) \le \liminf_k E_P(|X_{n(k)}|) < \infty$$

where from the uniform integrability assumption

$$\sup_{k\in\mathbb{N}} E_P\big(|X_{n(k)}|\big) \le M + \sup_{k\in\mathbb{N}} E_P\bigg(|X_{n(k)}|\mathbf{1}(|X_{n(k)}| > M)\bigg) < \infty\ ,$$

which implies $X \in L^1(P)$. For $K > 0$

$$E_P\big(|X_n - X|\big) = E_P\Big(|X_n - X|\mathbf{1}(|X_n - X| \le K)\Big) + E_P\Big(|X_n - X|\mathbf{1}(|X_n - X| > K)\Big)$$
$$= \int_0^K P(|X_n - X| > t)dt - KP(|X_n - X| > K) + E_P\Big(|X_n - X|\mathbf{1}(|X_n - X| > K)\Big)$$
$$\le \int_0^K P(|X_n - X| > t)dt + E_P\Big(|X_n - X|\mathbf{1}(|X_n - X| > K)\Big) \ ,$$

where we used Fubini theorem. Since $(X_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$ is uniformly integrable and $X \in L^1(P)$, it follows that $(|X_n - X| : n \in \mathbb{N})$ on tasaisesti integroituva, and $\forall\varepsilon$ $\exists K$ such that

$$\sup_n E_P\Big(|X_n - X|\mathbf{1}(|X_n - X| > K)\Big) < \varepsilon$$

Moreover, since $P(|X_n - X| > t)$ is bounded and $\lim_{n\to\infty} P(|X_n - X| > t) = 0$ $\forall t > 0$ by assumption, by Lebesgue convergence Theorem on the finite interval $[0, K]$ equipped with the Lebesgue measure it follows

$$\lim_{n\to\infty} \int_0^K P(|X_n - X| > t)dt = 0$$

which means that $\exists N$ such that $\forall n \ge N$

$$\int_0^K P(|X_n - X| > t)dt < \varepsilon$$

which implies $\forall n \ge N$

$$E_P\big(|X_n - X|\big) \le \int_0^K P(|X_n - X| > t)dt + \sup_n E_P\Big(|X_n - X|\mathbf{1}(|X_n - X| > K)\Big) \le 2\varepsilon \ .$$

(Sufficiency). By Chebychev inequality, we know that convergence in $L^1(P)$ is stronger than convergence in probability.

$$E_P(|X_n - X|) \to 0 \quad \Longrightarrow X_n \stackrel{P}{\to} X \ .$$

Since $X_n = X + (X_n - X)$, where by the assumptions $X \in L^1(P)$, it is enough to show that

$$\big\{|X_n - X| : n \in \mathbb{N}\big\}$$

is uniformly integrable. Let's assume without loss of generality that $X = 0$ P a.s.

Let $\varepsilon > 0$ and N such that $\forall n > N$

$$E_P\big(|X_n|\big) < \varepsilon$$

Since $\{X_1, \dots, X_N\} \subset L^1(P)$ is a finite subset , it is uniformly integrable, and $\exists K$ such that

$$\sup_{1\le n\le N} E_P\big(|X_n|\mathbf{1}(|X_n > K|)\big) < \varepsilon.$$

For the same K we have also for $\forall n \geq N$

$$E_P\big(|X_n|\mathbf{1}(|X_n| > K)\big) \leq E_P(|X_n|) < \varepsilon$$

which implies

$$\sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} E_P\big(|X_n|\mathbf{1}(|X_n > K|)\big) < \varepsilon \qquad \square$$

Uniform integrability is a compactness condition in $L^1(P)$ when we replace the L^1-norm topology by the so called weak-star topology:

Theorem 8. *(Dunford Pettis) A collection of random variables $\mathcal{C} \subseteq L^1(P)$ is UI if and only if it is weakly compact in $L^1(P)$ that is for every sequence $(X_n; n \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq \mathcal{C}$ there is a subsequence (n_k) and a random variable $X \in L^1(P)$ such that $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}$*

$$E_P\big((X_{n_k} - X)\mathbf{1}_A\big) \to 0$$

We prove $\Longrightarrow$, for the other implication see Kallenberg Foundations of Modern Probability Lemma 4.13. It is enough to consider the case when $X(\omega) \geq 0$ $\forall X \in \mathcal{C}$, since weak compactness of $\mathcal{C}$ will follow from weak compactness of $(X^+ : X \in \mathcal{C})$ and $(X^- : X \in \mathcal{C})$.

Banach-Alaoglu's theorem from Functional Analysis says that closed balls in the dual space of a Banach space are compact under the weak-star topology of the dual.

This means that if $\mathbf{X}$ is Banach space with dual $\mathbf{X}'$ and duality $\langle x, x'\rangle_{\mathbf{X},\mathbf{X}'}$, and the sequence $(x'_n : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subset \mathbf{X}'$ is bounded in $\mathbf{X}'$-norm (the operator norm),

$$\| x' \|_{\mathbf{X}'} = \sup_{x\in\mathbf{X}} \frac{|\langle x, x'\rangle_{\mathbf{X},\mathbf{X}'}|}{\| x \|_{\mathbf{X}}}$$

there is a subsequence n_k and $x' \in \mathbf{X}'$ such that

$$\langle x, x'_{n_k} - x', \rangle_{\mathbf{X},\mathbf{X}'} \longrightarrow 0 \quad \forall x \in \mathbf{X}.$$

Note that the map $x' \mapsto \langle x, x'\rangle_{X,X'}$ is linear and continuous in $\| \cdot \|_{\mathbf{X}'}$ norm, and provides an embedding of $\mathbf{X}$ into the bidual space $\mathbf{X}''$. We say that a Banach space is *reflexive* when $\mathbf{X}$ and $\mathbf{X}''$ are isomorphic. For example $L^p(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ is reflexive for $1 < p < \infty$, where the dual is $L^q(P)$ with conjugate exponential satisftying $(p^{-1} + q^{-1} = 1)$. $L^1(P)$ is not reflexive since its dual is the space of essentially bounded random variables $L^\infty(P)$, and the second dual (the dual of the dual space) is the space of signed finitely additive measures which are absolutely continuous w.r.t. P, denoted by $\mathrm{ba}(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$.

The unit ball of $\mathbf{X} = L^1(P)$ is mapped into the set of measures absolutely continuous w.r.t. P contained in the unit ball of $\mathbf{X}'' = \mathrm{ba}(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ by the map

$$X(\omega) \mapsto X(\omega)P(d\omega)$$

Let $(X_n : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq L^1(P)$ with $E_P(|X_n|) \leq 1$. By using the Banach-Alaoglu theorem on the bidual space, we obtain that there is a subsequence (n_k) and a finitely additive signed measure $\mu(d\omega) \ll P(d\omega)$ such that $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}$,

$$E_P\big(X_{n_k}\mathbf{1}_A\big) = \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_A(\omega)X_{n_k}(\omega)P(d\omega) \longrightarrow \mu(A), \quad \text{ as } k \to \infty.$$

When μ is σ-additive, by the Radon-Nikodym theorem $\mu(d\omega) = X(\omega)P(d\omega)$ for some $X \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$. However μ is finitely additive but does not need to be σ-additive, it is not guaranteed that for any sequence of events $(A_m : m \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq \mathcal{F}$ with $A_m \supseteq A_{m+1}$ and $\bigcap_{m\in\mathbb{N}} A_m = \emptyset$, we would have

$$\lim_{m\to\infty} \mu(A_m) = \lim_{m\infty} \lim_{k\to\infty} E_P\big(X_{n_k} \mathbf{1}_{A_m}\big) \overset{?}{=} \lim_{k\to\infty} \lim_{m\to\infty} E_P\big(X_{n_k} \mathbf{1}_{A_m}\big) = 0$$

because interchanging the order of the limits is not justified.

In order to bypass this problem we truncate the variables and work in the space $L^2(P)$ which is the dual of itself. Let $(X_n : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq \mathcal{C}$ and for $M \in \mathbb{N}$ consider the truncated random variables $X_n^{(M)} := X_n(\omega) \wedge M$. For fixed M, the sequence $(X_n^{(M)} : n \in \mathbb{N})$ is bounded in $L^2(P)$.

By the Banach Alaoglu theorem applied in $L^2(P)$ it follows that for every $M \in \mathbb{N}$ there is a subsequence $(n(M,k) : k \in \mathbb{N})$ and a r.v. $X^{(M)} \in L^2(P)$ such that $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}$

$$E_P\Big(\big(X_{n(M,k)}^{(M)} - X^{(M)}\big) \mathbf{1}_A \Big) \longrightarrow 0 \text{ as } k \to \infty$$

which means $X_{n(M,k)}^{(M)} \to X^{(M)}$ weakly in $L^1(P)$ (the dual of $L^1(P)$ is $L^\infty(P)$ the space of essentially bounded random variables, by a monotone class argument it is enough to check convergence using indicators). We use now a diagonal argument: for the subsequence $n_k := n(k,k)$,

$$E_P\Big((X_{n_k}^{(M)} - X^{(M)}) \mathbf{1}_A \Big) \longrightarrow 0 \text{ as } k \to \infty$$

holds simultaneously for all $M \in \mathbb{N}$. For $M, N \in \mathbb{N}$,

$$\begin{aligned}
&E\big(|X^{(M+N)} - X^{(M)}|\big) \\
&= E\Big((X^{(M+N)} - X^{(M)}) \mathbf{1}(X^{(M+N)} \geq X^{(M)}) \Big) + E\Big((X^{(M)} - X^{(M+N)}) \mathbf{1}(X^{(M+N)} < X^{(M)}) \Big) \\
&= \lim_{k\to\infty} E\Big((X_{n_k}^{(M+N)} - X_{n_k}^{(M)}) \mathbf{1}(X^{(M+N)} \geq X^{(M)}) \Big) + \lim_{k\to\infty} E\Big((X_{n_k}^{(M)} - X_{n_k}^{(M+N)}) \mathbf{1}(X^{(M+N)} < X^{(M)}) \Big)
\end{aligned}$$

by (6.2),

$$\begin{aligned}
&= \lim_{k\to\infty} E\Big(|X_{n_k}^{(M+N)} - X_{n_k}^{(M)}| \Big) \leq \sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} E\Big(\big(|X_n| - M\big) \mathbf{1}(|X_n| > M) \Big) \\
&\leq \sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} E\big(|X_n| \mathbf{1}(|X_n| > M) \big) \to 0 \text{ as } M \to \infty
\end{aligned}$$

by the UI assumption. Therefore $(X^{(M)} : M \in \mathbb{N})$ is a Cauchy sequence in the complete space $L^1(P)$ and it converges in $L^1(P)$ norm to a limit $X \in L^1(P)$. For $A \in \mathcal{F}$,

$$\begin{aligned}
&\Big| E_P\big((X_{n_k} - X) \mathbf{1}_A \big) \Big| \\
&= \Big| E_P\big((X_{n_k} - X_{n_k}^{(M)}) \mathbf{1}_A \big) + E_P\big((X_{n_k}^{(M)} - X^{(M)}) \mathbf{1}_A \big) + E_P\big((X^{(M)} - X) \mathbf{1}_A \big) \Big| \\
&\leq E_P\Big(|X_{n_k}| \mathbf{1}(|X_{n_k}| > M) \Big) + \Big| E_P\big((X_{n_k}^{(M)} - X^{(M)}) \mathbf{1}_A \big) \Big| + E_P\big(|X^{(M)} - X| \big)
\end{aligned}$$

where we choose first M large enough to make

$$E_P\big(|X^M - X|\big) \quad \text{and} \quad \sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} E_P\big(|X_n|\mathbf{1}(|X_n| > M)\big)$$

small, and then choose k large enough to make the middle term small □

Remark 7. *The stronger convergence of the subsequence in $L^1(P)$ does not follow.*

It is good to know the following characterization of uniform integrability:

Proposition 13. *$\mathcal{C} \subseteq L^1(P)$ is uniformly integrable if and only if*

$$\sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E_P(|X|) < \infty \qquad \textit{and} \qquad \forall\varepsilon > 0 \quad \exists\,\delta : P(A) < \delta \implies \sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E_P\big(|X|\mathbf{1}_A\big) < \varepsilon$$

Proof. exercise

Remark 8. *When $\mathcal{C} \subseteq L^1(P)$ is uniformly integrable, for K large enough*

$$\sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E_P(|X|) < K + \sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E(|X|\mathbf{1}(|X| > K)) < K + \varepsilon < \infty$$

Nevertheless the unit ball $B_1 = \{X \in L^1(P) : E_P(|X|) \le 1\}$ is not uniformly integrable: let $\{A_n : n \in \mathbb{N}\} \subseteq \mathcal{F}$ such that $P(A_n) = n^{-1}$, and $X_n(\omega) = n\,\mathbf{1}_{A_n}(\omega)$. Clearly $X_n \in B_1$ $\forall n$, and for all $K > 0$

$$\sup_n E_P\big(|X_n|\mathbf{1}(|X_n| > K)\big) = \sup_{n>K} E_P(|X_n|) = 1$$

However we have the following criteria:

Lemma 12. *Let $\mathcal{C} \subset L^p(\Omega)$ for some $p > 1$, with*

$$\sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E(|X|^p) < \infty$$

Then $\mathcal{C}$ is uniformly integrable.

Proof. Recall that $L^p(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P) \subset L^1(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$ for $p > 1$

$$E(|X|^p) \ge K^{p-1}E\big(|X|\mathbf{1}(|X| > K)\big) \Longrightarrow$$
$$\sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E\big(|X|\mathbf{1}(|X| > K)\big) \le K^{1-p} \sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E(X^p) \quad \longrightarrow 0, \quad \text{as } K \longrightarrow \infty$$

Theorem 9. *(A characterization of uniform integrability, by Leskelä and Vihola 2011). A collection of random variables $\mathcal{C}$ is uniformly integrable if and only if there exists a random variable $0 \le Y(\omega) \in L^1(P)$ such that $\forall K > 0$*

$$\sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E_P\Big((|X| - K)^+\Big) \le E_P\Big((Y - K)^+\Big)$$

where $x^+ = x \vee 0 = x\mathbf{1}(x > 0)$.

Proof We proof the $\Longleftarrow$ implication: from the inequality

$$x\mathbf{1}(x>K)\le 2\big(x-K/2\big)^+,\qquad K\ge 0\ ,$$

it follows

$$\sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E_P\big(|X|\mathbf{1}(|X|>K)\big)\le 2\sup_{X\in\mathcal{C}} E_P\big((|X|-K/2)^+\big)\le 2E_P\big((Y-K/2)^+\big)\to 0\ ,$$

as $K\to\infty$, where the Lebesgue's dominated convergence theorem applies, since $Y(\omega)\ge (Y(\omega)-K/2)^+\ge 0$ with $(Y(\omega)-K/2)^+\to 0$ P-almost surely $K\to\infty$, with integrable upper bound $Y(\omega)$ □

Remark 9. *When we interpret the random variable $Y(\omega)\ge 0$ as the market price of a stock at a given maturity time in the future. the random variable $(Y(\omega)-K)^+$ is called european call option with deterministic strike price K. At maturity, when the option expires, the holder of the option has the right but not the obligation to buy one stock at the predetermined price K. The option holder uses the option only when the market price is higher than the strike price. By selling the stock immediately at market price, the option holder gains $(Y(\omega)-K)^+$. If at maturity $Y(\omega)\le K$, the call option is worthless.*

Application: taking a derivative inside the expectation

Proposition 14. *On a probability space $(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$ consider an uniformly integrable family of random variable $\{Y(t,\omega):t\in[a,b]\}\subseteq L^1(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$, with $a<b\in\mathbb{R}$. We also assume that*

- *For all $\omega\in\Omega$, the map $t\mapsto Y(t,\omega)$ is continuous*

It follow that:

1. *the map $t\mapsto E_P(Y(t))$ is continuous.*
2. *Let*

$$X(t,\omega):=\int_a^t Y(s,\omega)ds,\ t\in[a,b].$$

Then at all $t\in(a,b)$ the derivative exists

$$\frac{d}{dt}E_P\big(X(t)\big)=E_P\big(Y(t)\big)=E_P\left(\frac{d}{dt}X(t)\right)$$

and it is continous.

Proof. From the continuity assumption $\lim_{s\to t}Y_s(\omega)=Y_t(\omega)$ and by uniform integrability it follows

$$|E_P(Y_t)-E_P(Y_s)|\le E_P|Y_t-Y_s|\to 0\quad\text{when}\ \ s\to t.$$

Moreover

$$\sup_{t\in[a,b]} E_P\big(|Y_t|\big)<+\infty$$

and $|Y(t,\omega)| \in L^1\big([a,b]\times\Omega, \mathcal{B}([a,b])\otimes\mathcal{F}, dt\otimes P(d\omega)\big)$. By Fubini's theorem

$$E_P(X_t) = E_P\left(\int_a^t Y(s)ds\right) = \int_{[a,b]\times\Omega} Y(s,\omega)\, ds\otimes P(d\omega) = \int_a^t E_P(Y(s))ds$$

and since $t\mapsto E_P(Y(t))$ is continuous, by the mid-value theorem of analysis

$$\lim_{\Delta\to 0}\Delta^{-1}\big\{E_P(X_{t+\Delta}) - E_P(X_t)\big\} =$$
$$\lim_{\Delta\to 0}\Delta^{-1}\int_t^{t+\Delta} E_P(Y(s))ds = E_P(Y(t)) \qquad \square$$

6.3 UI martingales

Lemma 13. *Let $X\in L^1(P)$. Then the family*

$$\Big\{Y = E_P(X|\mathcal{G}) : \mathcal{G}\subseteq\mathcal{F} \text{ sub-}\sigma\text{-algebra}\Big\}$$

is uniformly integrable.

Proof Since it is enough to prove it separately for $X^{\pm}$, where $X(\omega) = X^+(\omega) - X^-(\omega)$, we assume $X(\omega)\geq 0$. Then we apply Leskelä and Vihola's characterization Theorem 9: Since the function $x\mapsto(x-K)^+$ is convex, by Jensen inequality for the conditional expectation, $\forall K>0$

$$E_P\Big(\big(E_P(X|\mathcal{G}) - K\big)^+\Big) = E_P\Big(E_P(X-K|\mathcal{G})^+\Big)$$
$$\leq E_P\Big(E_P\big((X-K)^+|\mathcal{G}\big)\Big) = E_P\Big(\big(X-K\big)^+\Big) \qquad \square$$

Proposition 15.
- *Let $(M_t : t\in\mathbb{N})$ an UI martingale. Then $M_t(\omega)\longrightarrow M_\infty$ P-almost surely, and in $L^1(P)$. Morevoer*

$$M_t = E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t)$$

- *Let $X(\omega)\in L^1(P)$ and define $M_t = E_P(X|\mathcal{F}_t)$. Then $(M_t : t\in[0,+\infty])$ is an UI martingale with $M_t\longrightarrow M_\infty = E_P(X|\mathcal{F}_\infty)$ P-almost surely, and in $L^1(P)$.*

Proof

- From the UI property follows that for any $K\geq 0$

$$\sup_{t\in\mathbb{N}} E_P(|M_t|) \leq K + \sup_{t\in T} E_P\big(|M_t|\mathbf{1}(|M_t|>K)\big) < \infty$$

so that Doob martingale convergence theorem applies, there exists $M_\infty\in L^1(P)$ such that $M_t(\omega)\to M_\infty(\omega)$ P a.s. By the UI assuption, using the characterization of $L^1(P)$ convergence we have $E_P\big(|M_t - M_\infty|\big)\to 0$.

To show the martingale property,let's fix $t\geq 0$ and $A\in\mathcal{F}_t$.

The sequence $M_T(\omega)\mathbf{1}_A(\omega)\to M_\infty(\omega)\mathbf{1}_A(\omega)$ as $T\to\infty$ and it is obviously an UI family, so that by the martingale property and characterization of $L^1(P)$ convergence, for $T\geq t$,

$$E_P(M_t\mathbf{1}_A) = E_P(M_T\mathbf{1}_A)\to E_P(M_\infty\mathbf{1}_A) \quad \square$$

- When $X \in L^1(P)$ From the properties of the conditional expectation it follows that $M_t = E_P(X|\mathcal{F}_t)$ is integrable, adapted and satisfies the martingale property. Uniform integrability follows from lemma (13)□.

6.3.1 Backward convergence of martingales

Definition 24. *A backward filtration is an increasing family of σ-algebrae $(\mathcal{F}_t : t \in T)$ where $T = -\mathbb{N}, -\mathbb{R}, -\mathbb{N} \cup \{-\infty\} - \mathbb{R} \cup \{-\infty\}$. For $0 \geq t \geq u$*

$$\mathcal{F} \supseteq \mathcal{F}_t \supseteq \mathcal{F}_u \supseteq \mathcal{F}_{-\infty} = \bigcap_{t \in T} \mathcal{F}_t$$

where $\mathcal{F}_{-\infty}$ is the tail σ-algebra . The interpretation is that the information in $\mathcal{F}_t$ decreases as $t \downarrow -\infty$.

We consider a (sub,super)-martingale with respect to the backward filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t \leq 0}$ is an adapted and integrable process $(X_t : t \leq 0) \subseteq L^1(P)$ which satisfies the martingale property: for $0 \geq t \geq u$

$$E_P(X_t|\mathcal{F}_u) = X_u$$

(respectively $\geq, \leq$)

Theorem 10. *(Doob's martingale backward convergence) Let $(X_t : -t \in \mathbb{N})$ a be supermartingale in the backward filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \in -\mathbb{N})$.*

1. *P-almost surely, exists the limit*

$$X_{-\infty}(\omega) = \lim_{t \to -\infty} X_t(\omega) \in (-\infty, \infty]$$

2. *Under the assumption*

$$\sup_{t \in -\mathbb{N}} E(X_t^+) < +\infty$$

$X_{-\infty}(\omega) \in L^1(P)$ and is P-a.s. finite.

3. *When (X_t) is martingale in the backward filtration the assumption (3) holds automatically, $(X_t = E(X_0|\mathcal{F}_t), t \in -\mathbb{N})$ is uniformly integrable and*

$$X_{-\infty}(\omega) = E(X_0|\mathcal{F}_{-\infty})(\omega)$$

i.e. the martingale property holds in the extended time index set $(-\mathbb{N}) \cup \{-\infty\}$.

Proof We copy the proof of the forward convergence theorem, where we play the same supermartingale game in the shifted time interval $\{t, t+1, \ldots, -2, -1, 0\}$, with $t \in (-\mathbb{N})$. The profit given by the martingale transform

$$Y_s = (C \cdot X)_s = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{for } s \leq t \\ \sum_{r=t+1}^{s} C_r(X_r - X_{r-}) & \text{for } t < s \leq 0 \end{cases}$$

where $C_r(\omega) \in \{0, 1\}$ is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable. It follows that $(Y_s : s \in -\mathbb{N})$ is a supermartingale as well, and

$$0 = E(Y_t) \geq E(Y_0) \geq E(U_{a,b}([t, 0])(b - a) - (X_0 - a)^-$$

where $U_{a,b}([t,0])$ the number of upcrossing of $(X_s(\omega))$ in the interval $[t,0]$.

$$E_P(U_{[a,b]}([t,0])) \leq \frac{|a| + E_P(X_0^-)}{(b-a)} < \infty \quad \forall t \leq 0$$

Since $U_{[a,b]}([t,0]) \uparrow U_{a,b}((-\infty,0])$ as $t \downarrow (-\infty)$, by monotone convergence theorem $E_P(U_{[a,b]}((-\infty,0])) < \infty$, which implies $U_{[a,b]}((-\infty,0]) < \infty$ P a.s. Since this holds for all $a < b \in \mathbb{Q}$, it follows as in the forward theorem that

$$X_{-\infty}(\omega) := \limsup_{t \to -\infty} X_t(\omega) = \liminf_{t \to -\infty} X_t(\omega) \quad P\text{-almost surely}$$

When X_t is martingale by Fatou lemma

$$\begin{aligned} E(|X_{-\infty}|) = E(\liminf_t |X_t|) \leq \liminf_t E(|X_t|) = \liminf_t E\big(|E(X_0|\mathcal{F}_t)|\big) \\ \leq \liminf_t E\big(E(|X_0||\mathcal{F}_t)\big) = E(|X_0|) < \infty \end{aligned}$$

In the supermartingale case, we have only

$$E(|X_{-\infty}|) = E(\liminf_t |X_t|) \leq \liminf_t E(|X_t|) = \liminf_t \big\{E(X_t^+) + E(X_t^-)\big\}$$

From the supermartingale property

$$X_t \geq E(X_0|\mathcal{F}_t) \quad t \leq 0$$

it follows

$$X_t^- \leq E(X_0|\mathcal{F}_t)^- \leq E(X_0^-|\mathcal{F}_t) \Longrightarrow E(X_t^-) \leq E(X_0^-)\ ,$$

which implies $X_{-\infty}(\omega) > -\infty$ P-a.s. Since we dont' get for free an upper bound for $E(X_t^+)$, we need to assume (3).

Finally let $A \in \mathcal{F}_{-\infty} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{-t}$ $\forall t \leq 0$. Since $X_t = E_P(X_0|\mathcal{F}_t)$ is uniformly integrable, when we use the definition of conditional expectation we can take the limit inside the expectation getting

$$E_P(X_0\mathbf{1}_A) = E_P(X_t\mathbf{1}_A) \to E_P(X_\infty\mathbf{1}_A)$$

which means $X_{-\infty} = E_P(X_t|\mathcal{F}_{-\infty})$.

Remark 10. *When $(X_t : t \in -\mathbb{N})$ is just a supermartingale bounded in $L^1(P)$ and not a martingale, we could rewrite*

$$X_t = M_t + \widetilde{X}_t, \qquad t \in -\mathbb{N}$$

where $M_t = E_P(X_0|\mathcal{F}_t)$ and $\widetilde{X}_t = (X_t - M_t) \geq 0$ is a non-negative supermartingale bounded in $L^1(P)$. Still although $M_t(\omega) \to M_\infty(\omega)$ P a.s. and in $L^1(P)$, we do not get the uniform integrability for free and we do not have $X_t \to X_{-\infty}$ in $L^1(P)$ sense.

Strong law of large numbers by martingale backward convergence

Lemma 14. *(Kolmogorov $0-1$ law) On a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ consider a sequence of P-independent σ-algebrae $(\mathcal{G}_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$, $\mathcal{G}_n \subseteq \mathcal{F}$.*

This means that $\forall d \in \mathbb{N}$, $A_1 \in \mathcal{G}_1, \dots A_d \in \mathcal{G}_d$

$$P(A_1 \cap A_2 \cap \dots \cap A_d) = P(A_1)P(A_2)\dots P(A_d)$$

We introduce the σ algebrae

$$\mathcal{F}_n = \bigvee_{k=0}^{n} \mathcal{G}_k, \quad \mathcal{F}_\infty = \bigvee_{k=0}^{\infty} \mathcal{G}_k, \quad \mathcal{T}_{-n} = \bigvee_{k=n}^{\infty} \mathcal{G}_k, \quad \mathcal{T}_{-\infty} = \bigcap_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \mathcal{T}_{-n}$$

Then the σ-algebra $\mathcal{T}_{-\infty}$ is P-trivial, i.e. $A \in \mathcal{T}_{-\infty} \Longrightarrow P(A) \in \{0,1\}$

Proof *By assumption the σ-algebrae $\mathcal{F}_{n-1}$ and $\mathcal{T}_n$ are P-independent.*

Let $A \in \mathcal{T}_{-\infty} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_\infty$, then for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$ A is P-independent from $\mathcal{F}_n$.

It is easy to see that A is also P-independent from $\mathcal{F}_\infty$: for $B \in \mathcal{F}_\infty$, consider

$$E(\mathbf{1}_B|\mathcal{F}_n)(\omega) = P(B|\mathcal{F}_n)(\omega) \to \mathbf{1}_B(\omega) \ P \ a.s. \text{ and in } L^1(P)$$

Then

$$\begin{aligned} P(A\cap B) &= E(\mathbf{1}_A\mathbf{1}_B) = E\big(\mathbf{1}_A \lim_{n\to\infty} E(\mathbf{1}_B|\mathcal{F}_n)\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E\big(\mathbf{1}_A E(\mathbf{1}_B|\mathcal{F}_n)\big) \\ &= \lim_{n\to\infty} E(\mathbf{1}_A)E\big(E(\mathbf{1}_B|\mathcal{F}_n)\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} P(A)P(B) = P(A)P(B) \end{aligned}$$

Since $A \in \mathcal{F}_\infty$, A is P-independent from itself and

$$P(A) = P(A\cap A) = P(A)P(A) = P(A)^2 \Longrightarrow P(A) \in \{0,1\}$$

Theorem 11. *(Kolmogorov's strong law of large numbers)*

Let $(X_t(\omega) : t \in \mathbb{N})$ i.i.d. with $X_1 \in L^1(P)$, and

$$S_t(\omega) = X_1(\omega) + \dots + X_t(\omega)$$

Then

$$\lim_{t\to\infty} t^{-1}S_t(\omega) = E_P(X_1) \qquad P\text{-a.s. and in } L^1(P).$$

Proof Consider the backward filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_{-t} : t \in \mathbb{N})$ where for $t \le 0$

$$\mathcal{F}_{-t} = \sigma(S_t, S_{t+1}, \dots),$$

the $\mathbb{F}$-martingale

$$M_{-t} = E_P(X_1|\mathcal{F}_{-t}) \qquad t \in \mathbb{N}$$

The σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_t$ is non-decreasing with respect to $t \in (-\mathbb{N})$.

By symmetry, the random pairs (S_t, X_r) ja (S_t, X_1) are identically distributed for $1 \le r \le t$, and by P-independence for $t \ge 0$

$$\begin{aligned} M_{-t} &:= E_P(X_1|\mathcal{F}_{-t}) = E_P(X_1|S_t, S_{t+1}, S_{t+2}, \dots) \\ &= E_P(X_1|S_t, X_{t+1}, X_{t+2}\dots) = E_P(X_1|\sigma(S_t)) = E_P(X_r|\sigma(S_t)) \quad \forall 1 \le r \le t \end{aligned}$$

which means

$$S_t = E_P(X_1 + \cdots + X_t|\sigma(S_t)) = \sum_{r=1}^{t} E_P(X_r|\sigma(S_t)) = tE_P(X_1|\sigma(S_-))$$

and $M_{-t}(\omega) = S_t(\omega)/t$ for $t \geq 0$.

By Doob's martingale backward convergence theorem

$$\lim_{t\to\infty} t^{-1}S_t(\omega) = M_{-\infty}(\omega) \quad P \text{ a.s. and in } L^1(P)$$

where we define $\forall\omega \in \Omega$

$$M_{-\infty}(\omega) := \liminf_{t\to\infty} t^{-1}S_t(\omega)$$

Note also that $\forall\omega \in \Omega$, $\forall n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$\begin{aligned} \liminf_{t\to\infty} \frac{1}{t}S_t(\omega) &= \liminf_{t\to\infty} \frac{1}{t}\sum_{i=1}^{n} X_i(\omega) + \liminf_{t\to\infty} \frac{1}{t}\sum_{i=(n+1)}^{t} X_i(\omega) \\ &= 0 + \liminf_{t\to\infty} \frac{1}{t}\sum_{i=(n+1)}^{t} X_i(\omega) \end{aligned}$$

is $\mathcal{T}_{-n} = \sigma(X_n, X_{n+1}, \dots)$-measurable $\forall n$, therefore it is measurable with respect to the tail σ-algebra $\mathcal{T}_{-\infty}$. Since the random variables $(X_t)_{t\in\mathbb{N}}$ are P-independent, by Kolmogorov's $0-1$ law it follows that $M_{-\infty}(\omega)$ is P-trivial: $P(t \leq M_{-\infty}) \in \{0,1\}$ $\forall t$ and $P(M_{-\infty} < \infty) = 1$, there is $c \in \mathbb{R}$ such that $P(M_{-\infty} = c) = 1$.

P almost surely and in $L^1(P)$

$$\frac{1}{t}S_t(\omega) \to c = E_P(X_1|\mathcal{F}_{-\infty})(\omega)$$

By taking expectation

$$c = E_P(M_{-\infty}) = E_P\big(E_P(X_1|\mathcal{F}_{-\infty})\big) = E_P(X_1).$$

Note $t^{-1}S_t(\omega) = E_P(X_1|\sigma(S_t))(\omega)$ follows from symmetry, and then we applied martingale backward convergence P-a.s. and in $L^1(P)$. Independence was needed to show that the limit

$$E_P(X_1|\sigma(S_t))(\omega) = E_P(X_1|\sigma(S_t, S_{t+1}, S_{t+2}\dots))(\omega)$$

is P-trivial. Without the independence assumption, we obtain the limit is a random variable. This extension is De Finetti's theorem. Bruno De Finetti (1906-1985) was an italian probabilist, economist and philosepher.

6.4 Exchangeability and De Finetti's theorem

Definition 25. *The sequence of random variables $(X_t)_{t\in\mathbb{N}}$ where $X_t(\omega)$ takes values in the measurable space $(S, \mathcal{S})$ is infinitely exchangeable (suomeksi äärettömästi vaihdettavissa) when $\forall n$, $t_1, \dots, t_n \in \mathbb{N}$ and any π permutation of $\{1, \dots, n\}$, the random vectors $(X_{t_1}, \dots, X_{t_n})$ and $(X_{t_{\pi(1)}}, \dots, X_{t_{\pi(n)}})$ have the same distribution under P.*

Note that that when $X_t(\omega)$ takes values in $\mathbb{R}$,

$$M_{-t}(\omega) = t^{-1}S_t(\omega) := E(X_1|\mathcal{T}_{-t}), \quad t \in \mathbb{N}$$

is an uniformly integrable martingale in the backward filtration $\mathbb{F}$ which has a limit P-a.s. and in $L^1(P)$ as $t \to \infty$

$$M_{-\infty}(\omega) = E(X_1|\mathcal{T}_{-\infty})(\omega) \ .$$

The tail σ-algebra $\mathcal{T}_{-\infty}$ is not necessarly trivial and $M_{-\infty}(\omega)$ is a random variable.

Definition 26. *The random variables $(X_t(\omega) : t \in \mathbb{N})$ taking values in $(S, \mathcal{S})$ are* **conditionally** *indendent and identically distributed given the σ-algebra $\mathcal{G}$ when, $\forall n$, $t_1, \dots, t_n$, $A_1 \dots A_n \in \mathcal{S}$,*

$$P(X_{t_1} \in A_1, \dots, X_{t_n} \in A_n|\mathcal{G})(\omega) = \prod_{i=1}^{n} P(X_1 \in A_i|\mathcal{G})(\omega) \quad P \ a.s.$$

By taking expectation of the conditional expectation it follows that conditionally i.i.d. random variables are infinitely exchangeable. The reverse implication holds.

Theorem 12. *(De Finetti) Assume that $(S, \mathcal{S})$ is a Borel space, and the random sequence $(X_t(\omega) : t \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq S$ is infinitely exchangeable w.r.t. P.*

Then $(X_t(\omega) : t \in \mathbb{N})$ are conditionally independent and identically distributed with respect to a tail σ-algebra $\mathcal{T}_{-\infty}$ to be defined below.

Proof Let consider the *empirical measure* of the first t- variables

$$\mu_t(dx; \omega) = t^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^{t} \mathbf{1}(X_i(\omega) \in dx)$$

which generated the σ-algebra

$$\sigma(\mu_t) = \sigma\{\mu_t(A) : A \in \mathcal{S}\} \subseteq \mathcal{F}.$$

Note that $\sigma(\mu_t) \subseteq \sigma(X_1, \dots, X_t)$, and for $t > 1$ it is strictly smaller because it contains the information about the realized values of the random variables but it forgets their time order.

Define the decreasing sequence of σ-algebrae

$$\mathcal{T}_{-t} := \bigvee_{k \geq t} \sigma(\mu_k), \quad \mathcal{T}_{-\infty} = \bigcap_{t \in \mathbb{N}} \mathcal{T}_{-t} \ , \text{ is the tail } \sigma\text{-algebra} \ .$$

Let $1 \leq k \leq t \in \mathbb{N}$ and $f(x_1, \dots, x_k) : S^k \to \mathbb{R}$ a bounded measurable function, not necessarily symmetric. By symmetry we compute $E_P(f(X_1, \dots, X_k)|\mathcal{T}_{-t})(\omega)$:

Define the random probability measure

$$\mu_t^{\circ k} : \mathcal{S}^{\otimes k} \to [0, 1]$$

which is a regular version of the conditional distribution of the random vector $(X_1, \dots, X_k)$ conditionally on the σ-algebra $\sigma(\mu_t)$ (the regular version exists since $(S, \mathcal{S})$ is a Borel space).

By symmetry

$$E_P(f(X_1, \dots, X_k)|\sigma(\mu_t))(\omega) =$$
$$\mu_t^{\circ k}(f;\omega) := \int_{S^k} f(x)\mu_t^{\circ k}(dx;\omega) = \frac{1}{t!}\sum_{\pi} f(X_{\pi(1)}(\omega), \dots, X_{\pi(k)}(\omega)) =$$
$$\frac{(t-k)!}{t!} \sum_{1 \le i_1, \dots, i_k \le t \text{ distinct}} f(X_{i_1}, X_{i_2}, \dots, X_{i_k})$$

where we sum over the permutations π of the set $\{1, \dots, t\}$.

Note that $\mu^{\circ k}(dx;\omega)$ is $\sigma(\mu_t)$-measurable, since it depends only on the values $\{X_1(\omega), \dots, X_t(\omega)\}$ and not by their ordering. Note also that $\mu_t^{\circ k}(dx)$ is not a product measure, since in the sum there are not terms with repeated indexes.

For $k = 1$

$$\mu_t^{\circ 1}(A) = \mu_t(A) = \frac{1}{t}\sum_{k=1}^{t} \mathbf{1}(X_k \in A)$$

is the empirical measure of $(X_1(\omega), \dots, X_t(\omega))$.

For $k \le t$ and any permutation π of $\{1, \dots, t\}$, by exchangeability $(X_1, \dots, X_k, \mu_t)$ and $(X_{\pi(1)}, \dots, X_{\pi(k)}, \mu_t)$ have the same distribution, which implies

$$E_P(f(X_1, \dots, X_k|\sigma(\mu_t))(\omega) = E_P(f(X_{\pi(1)}, \dots, X_{\pi(k)})|\sigma(\mu_t))(\omega)$$

By taking the normalized sum over the permutations,

$$\mu_t^{\circ k}(f;\omega) = E_P(f(X_1, \dots, X_k)|\sigma(\mu_t))(\omega)$$

Next we show that

$$E_P(f(X_1, \dots, X_k)|\sigma(\mathcal{T}_{-t}))(\omega) = E_P(f(X_1, \dots, X_k)|\sigma(\mu_t))(\omega)$$

Note also that

$$\mathcal{T}_{-t} = \sigma(\mu_t, \mu_{t+1}, \mu_{t+2}, \dots) = \sigma(\mu_t, X_{t+1}, X_{t+2}, \dots)$$

since the empirical measures $\mu_t(dx;\omega)$ and $\mu_{t+1}(dx;\omega)$ determine $X_{t+1}(\omega)$ by the identity

$$(\mu_{t+1} - \mu_t)(dx) = \frac{1}{t+1}\bigg(\mathbf{1}(X_{t+1} \in dx) - \mu_t(dx)\bigg)$$

Exercise 8. *$(X_1, \dots, X_t)$ and $(X_{t+1}, X_{t+2}, \dots)$ are conditionally independent given $\sigma(\mu_t)$,*

Solution *Note that a random variable $W(\omega)$ is $\sigma(\mu_t)$-measurable if and only if $W(\omega) = g(X_1, \dots, X_t)$ where g is measurable and symmetric, i.e.*

$$g(x_1, \dots, x_t) = g(x_{\pi(1)}, \dots, x_{\pi(t)}) \quad \forall \pi \text{ permutations }.$$

Assume that $g(x_1,\dots,x_t)$ is also bounded, and let $Y(\omega)$ be a bounded and $\sigma(X_{t+1},X_{t+2},\dots)$-measurable random variab le and $Z(\omega)=f(x_1,\dots,x_t)$ bounded and $\mathcal{S}^{\otimes t}$-measurable, (not necessarly symmetric) random variable.

By infinite exchangeability it follows that $\forall y\in\mathbb{N}$ and for all permutations π of the indexes $\{1,\dots,t\}$, the sequences

$$(X_1,X_2,\dots X_t,X_{t+1},X_{t+2},\dots)\overset{\mathcal{L}}{=}(X_{\pi(1)},X_{\pi(2)},\dots X_{\pi(t)},X_{t+1},X_{t+2},\dots)$$

have the same distribution,

$$\begin{aligned}
&E_P(W\ Z\ Y)=E_P\big(g(X_1,\dots,X_t)\ f(X_1,\dots,X_t)\ Y\big)\\
&=E_P\big(g(X_{\pi(1)},\dots,X_{\pi(t)})\ f(X_{\pi(1)},\dots,X_{\pi(t)})\ Y\big)\\
&\quad(\text{ since the sequence is exchangeable })\\
&=E_P\big(g(X_1,\dots,X_t)\ f(X_{\pi(1)},\dots,X_{\pi(t)})Y\big)=E_P\big(W\ f(X_{\pi(1)},\dots,X_{\pi(t)})\ Y\big)\\
&\quad(\text{ since } g \text{ is symmetric })\\
&=\frac{1}{t!}\sum_{\pi}E_P\big(Wf(X_{\pi(1)},\dots,X_{\pi(t)})Y\big)=E_P\left(W\ Y\frac{1}{t!}\sum_{\pi}f(X_{\pi(1)},\dots,X_{\pi(t)})\right)\\
&=E_P\big(W\ Y\ \mu_t^{\circ t}(f)\big)
\end{aligned}$$

By definition of conditional expectation

$$\mu_t^{\circ t}(f;\omega)=E_P\big(f(X_1,\dots,X_t)\big|\sigma(\mu_t)\big)(\omega)=E_P\big(f(X_1,\dots,X_t)\big|\sigma(\mu_t,X_{t+1},X_{t+2},\dots)\big)(\omega)$$

which means that under P, $(X_1,\dots,X_t)$ and $(X_{t+1},X_{t+2},\dots)$ are conditionally independent conditionally on $\sigma(\mu_t)$.

In other words, $\mathcal{T}_{-t}$ does not contain information about the time-order of the first n values of the sequence.

Since $M^{(k)}_{-t}(f):=\mu_t^{\circ k}(f)$ is a martingale in the filtration $(\mathcal{T}_{-t}:t\in\mathbb{N})$, by Doob's martingale backward convergence theorem as $t\to\infty$, the limit $M^{(k)}_{-\infty}(f)$ exists P-a.s. and in $L^1(P)$ sense.

Since $(X_1,\dots,X_k)$ takes values in the Borel space $(S^k,\mathcal{S}^{\otimes k})$, the conditional probability

$$P((X_1,\dots,X_k)\in A|\mathcal{T}_{-\infty})(\omega),\quad A\in\mathcal{S}^{\otimes k}$$

has a regular version, which is a $\mathcal{T}_{-\infty}$-measurable probability kernel $\mu_\infty^{\circ k}(dx;\omega)$ on $(S^k,\mathcal{S}^{\otimes k})$ such that P-a.s., for all bounded measurable functions $f(x_1,\dots,x_k)$

$$\begin{aligned}
M^{(k)}_{-\infty}(f;\omega)&=E_P(f(X_1,\dots,X_k)|\sigma(\mathcal{T}_{-\infty}))(\omega)\\
&=\int_{S_1,\dots,S_k}f(x_1,\dots,x_k)\mu_\infty^{\circ k}(dx_1,\dots dx_k;\omega)
\end{aligned}$$

For $k=1$ denote $\mu_\infty=\mu_\infty^{\circ 1}$, where

$$\lim_{t\to\infty}\frac{1}{t}\sum_{i=1}^{t}f(X_i(\omega))=\int_S f(x)\mu_\infty(dx,\omega)\qquad P\text{-a.s.}$$

Exercise 9. *Since* $(S, \mathcal{S})$ *is a Borel space there is a measurable injection* $f : (S, \mathcal{S}) \to ([0,1], \mathcal{B}([0,1]))$ *with measurable inverse* f^{-1}. *It follows that* $A \subseteq \mathcal{S}$, $A \in \mathcal{S}$ *if and only if* $f(A)$ *is Borel set. Since*

$$\sigma\big\{(a,b] : 0 \le a < b \le 1,\ a,b \in \mathbb{Q}\big\} = \mathcal{B}([0,1])$$

it follows that also $\mathcal{S}$ *is countably generated, since*

$$\mathcal{S} = \sigma\big\{f^{-1}((a,b] \cap f(S)) : 0 \le a < b \le 1, a,b \in \mathbb{Q}\big\} = \sigma\big\{A(\ell) : \ell \in \mathbb{N}\big\}$$

This implies that conditional probabilities on $(S, \mathcal{S})$ *have regular versions.*

We know a priori that $\forall A \in \mathcal{S}$, $\exists \mathcal{N}_A \subseteq \Omega$ *with* $P(\mathcal{N}_A) = 0$ *such that*

$$\mu_t(A;\omega) \to \mu_\infty(A;\omega) \quad \forall \omega \notin \mathcal{N}_A$$

Since $P(\mathcal{N}) = 0$ *where* $\mathcal{N} = \bigcup_{\ell \in \mathbb{N}} \mathcal{N}_{A(\ell)}$, *it follows that*

$$\mu_t(A_\ell;\omega) \to \mu_\infty(A_\ell;\omega) \quad \forall \ell \in \mathbb{N} \quad \forall \omega \notin \mathcal{N}$$

and since $\sigma\{A_\ell : \ell \in \mathbb{N}\} = \mathcal{S}$ *it follows that* $\forall A \in \mathcal{S}$

$$\mu_t(A;\omega) \to \mu_\infty(A;\omega) \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{S} \quad \forall \omega \notin \mathcal{N} \tag{6.1}$$

Similarly we find a P*-null set* $\widetilde{\mathcal{N}} \subseteq \Omega$ *such that* $\forall k \in \mathbb{N}$, $\forall \{A_i\} \subseteq \mathcal{S}$

$$\mu_t^{\circ k}(A_1 \times \cdots \times A_k;\omega) \to \mu_\infty^{\circ k}(A_1 \times \cdots \times A_k;\omega) \quad \forall \omega \notin \widetilde{\mathcal{N}} \tag{6.2}$$

P-almost surely the collection of finite dimensional distributions

$$\Big\{\mu_\infty^{\circ k}(dx_1, \dots dx_k;\omega) : k \in \mathbb{N}\Big\}$$

is consistent, and by Kolmogorov's extension theorem 3, for each ω outside a P-null set there is a random probability measure $\boldsymbol{\nu}_\infty(\ \cdot\ ;\omega)$ on the space of sequences $(x_k : k \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq S$ such that $\forall k$, $A_1, \dots, A_k \in \mathcal{S}$

$$P\big(X_1 \in A_1, \dots X_k \in A_k | \mathcal{T}_{-\infty}\big)(\omega) = \\ \mu_\infty^{\circ k}(A_1 \times \cdots \times A_k;\omega) = \boldsymbol{\nu}_\infty\big(\big\{(x_l : l \in \mathbb{N}) : x_1 \in A_1, \dots, x_k \in A_k\big\};\omega\big)$$

We show that P-a.s. $\boldsymbol{\nu}_\infty(\cdot;\omega)$ is an product measure of infinite copies, which means

$$P\big(X_1 \in A_1, \dots X_k \in A_k | \mathcal{T}_{-\infty}\big)(\omega) = \prod_{i=1}^k P(X_1 \in A_i | \mathcal{T}_{-\infty})(\omega) \quad \forall k \in \mathbb{N}.$$

Let $\mu_t^{\otimes k}$ be the k-fold product measure of the empirical measure μ_t. For every bounded and Borel measurable $f(x_1, \dots, x_k)$,

$$\mu_t^{\otimes k}(f) = t^{-k} \sum_{1 \le i_1, \dots, i_k \le t} f(X_{i_1}, \dots, X_{i_k})$$

where the sum contains also terms with repeated indexes. Then

$$(\mu_t^{\circ k} - \mu_t^{\otimes k})(f) = \mu_t^{\circ k}(f) - \mu_t^{\otimes k}(f) =$$
$$\mu_t^{\circ k}(f)\left(1 - \frac{t!}{t^k(t-k)!}\right) + t^{-k} \sum_{1 \le i_1, \dots i_k \le t:\ \exists l \neq m\ i_l = i_m} f(X_{i_1}, \dots, X_{i_k})$$

where in the first part we have terms without repeated indexes and in the second part all terms have at least on index repeated. Then $\forall k \in \mathbb{N}, \omega \in \Omega$,

$$|\mu_t^{\circ k}(f;\omega) - \mu_t^{\otimes k}(f;\omega)| \le \| f \|_\infty \left(1 - \prod_{l=0}^{k-1} \frac{(t-l)}{t} + t^{-k}\binom{k}{2} t^{k-1}\right) \longrightarrow 0$$

as $t \to \infty$, where $\| f \|_\infty = \sup_{x \in S} |f(x)|$ and the upper bound does not depend on ω.

For all $A_1, A_2 \dots \in \mathcal{S}$, $\forall k$ P-a.s. as $t \to \infty$

$$\mu_t^{\circ k}(A_1 \times A_2 \times \dots \times A_k) \longrightarrow \mu_\infty^{\circ k}(A_1 \times A_2 \times \dots \times A_k)\ .$$

For $k = 1$

$$\mu_t^{\circ 1}(A_i) \longrightarrow \mu_\infty(A_i),$$

and convergence follows also for the product measures

$$\mu_t^{\otimes k}(A_1 \times A_2 \times \dots \times A_k) = \prod_{i=1}^k \mu_t^{\circ 1}(A_i) \to \prod_{i=1}^k \mu_\infty(A_i) = \mu_\infty^{\otimes k}(A_1 \times A_2 \times \dots \times A_k).$$

By triangle inequality

$$|\mu_{-\infty}^{\circ k}(f) - \mu_{-\infty}^{\otimes k}(f)|$$
$$\le |\mu_{-\infty}^{\circ k}(f) - \mu_t^{\circ k}(f)| + |\mu_t^{\circ k}(f) - \mu_t^{\otimes k}(f)| + |\mu_t^{\otimes k}(f) - \mu_\infty^{\otimes k}(f)| \to 0$$

P-a.s. as $t \to \infty$, and

$$\mu_\infty^{\circ k}(f;\omega) = \mu_\infty^{\otimes k}(f;\omega) \qquad P\text{-a.s}$$

for all bounded measurable $f(x_1, \dots, x_k)$. It means that $\boldsymbol{\nu}_\infty$ is a product measure on the space of infinite sequences $S^{\mathbb{N}}$. For all bounded measurable functions $g_1, \dots, g_k : S \to \mathbb{R}$

$$E_P(g_1(X_1) \dots g_k(X_k) | \mathcal{T}_{-\infty})(\omega) = \prod_{\ell=1}^k \left\{ \int_S g_\ell(x) \mu_\infty(dx, \omega) \right\}$$

By taking expectations,

$$E_P(g_1(X_1) \dots g_k(X_k)) =$$
$$E_P\left(\prod_{\ell=1}^k \left\{ \int_S g_\ell(x) \mu_\infty(dx) \right\} \right) = \int_{\mathcal{M}(S)} \left\{ \prod_{\ell=1}^k \int_S g_\ell(x) \mu(dx) \right\} Q(d\mu)$$

where Q is the distribution of the random measure $\mu_\infty(dx;\omega)$ in the space

$$\mathcal{M}(S) = \{ \text{ probability measures } \nu : \mathcal{S} \to [0,1] \ \}$$

In other words, a permutation symmetric (i.e. infinitely exchangeable) random sequence with values in a Borel space is the mixture of i.i.d. sequences
□

Exercise 10. *De Finetti original proof was for the simplest case of random binary sequences, where $S = \{0,1\}$ and the space of probability measures on S is $\mathcal{M}(S) = [0,1]$.*

Let $S_t(\omega) = (X_1(\omega) + \cdots + X_t(\omega))$.

In coin-toss experiment, if the sequence of coin tosses is infinitely exchangeable under P, it has a limit $\vartheta(\omega) := \lim_{t\to\infty} t^{-1} S_t(\omega) \in [0,1]$ P-a.s. and in $L^1(P)$ sense.

Let $Q(d\theta) = P(\{\omega : \vartheta(\omega) \in d\theta\})$. By conditioning on the σ-algebra $\sigma(\vartheta)$, the coin-tosses are conditionally independent and Bernoulli distributed, with the same random probability-parameter $\vartheta(\omega) \in [0,1]$. The probability distribution of the limit $Q(d\theta)$ is interpreted as a priori probability on the parameter ϑ. It follows $\forall k$, $(x_i)_{i\in\mathbb{N}} \subseteq \{0,1\}$,

$$P\big(X_1 = x_1, \dots, X_k = x_k\big) = \int_0^1 \left\{ \prod_{i=1}^k P(X_1 = x_i | \vartheta = \theta) \right\} Q(d\theta)$$
$$= \int_0^1 \theta^{S_k} (1-\theta)^{(k-S_k)} Q(d\theta)$$
$$Q(B) = P\big(\{\omega : \lim_{t\to\infty} t^{-1} S_t(\omega) \in B\}\big), \quad B \in \mathcal{B}([0,1])$$

De Finetti's theorem is at the mathematical foundation of Bayesian statistical inference.

6.4.1 Doob decomposition

Proposition 16. *Assume that $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is an $\mathbb{F}$-adapted process. We always have the Doob decomposition*

$$X_t = X_0 + M_t + A_t \text{ where } A_0 = 0$$
$$A_t = \sum_{s=1}^t \Delta A_s = \sum_{s=1}^t \big(E(X_s|\mathcal{F}_{s-1}) - X_{s-1}\big) \text{ is } \mathbb{F}\text{-predictable,}$$
$$M_t = \sum_{s=1}^t \Delta M_s = \sum_{s=1}^t \big(X_s - E(X_s|\mathcal{F}_{s-1})\big) \text{ is a } \mathbb{F}\text{-martingale}$$

Proof write the telescopic sums with $\Delta X_t = \Delta M_t + \Delta A_t$.

When X_t is an ($\mathbb{F}$)-submartingale (respectively supermartingale) A_t is non-decreasing (respectively non-increasing).

6.4.2 Riesz decomposition

Definition 27. *A potential $(Z_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$ is a non-negative $(P,\mathbb{F})$-supermartingale with*

$$\lim_{n\to\infty} E_P(Z_n) = 0 \ .$$

The potential terminology comes in analogy with physics, where potentials do vanish at infinity. Note that a potential is necessarily uniformly integrable.

Definition 28. *We say that a* $(\mathbb{F}, P)$*-supermartingale* $(X_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$ *has Riesz decomposition when*

$$X_n = Y_n + Z_n \tag{6.3}$$

where Y_n *is a martingale and* Z_n *is a potential.*

Theorem 13. *A* $(P, \mathbb{F})$*-supermartingale* $(X_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$ *satisfying*

$$\sup_{n \in \mathbb{N}} E_P\big(X_n^-\big) < \infty$$

has Riesz decomposition (6.3) with

$$Y_n = M_n - E(A_\infty | \mathcal{F}_n), \quad Z_n = E(A_\infty | \mathcal{F}_n) - A_n,$$

where $X_n = M_n - A_n$ *is the Doob decomposition of* X *into a martingale part* M *and a predictable part with* A *non-decreasing and* $A_0 = 0$*. The Riesz decomposition is unique.*

Proof: exercise

6.4.3 Krickeberg decomposition

Definition 29. *We say that* $(P, \mathbb{F})$*-supermartingale* $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ *has Krickeberg decomposition if*

$$X_t = L_t - M_t \tag{6.4}$$

where $L_t \geq 0$ *is a supermartingale and* $M_t \geq 0$ *is a martingale*

Theorem 14. *A* $(P, \mathbb{F})$*-supermartingale* $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ *has Krickeberg decomposition (6.4) with*

$$L_t = (X_t - Y_t) = X_t^+ + Z_t \geq 0, \qquad \text{and} \qquad M_t = -Y_t = X_t^- + Z_t \geq 0,$$

where

$$-X_t^- = Y_t + Z_t$$

is the Riesz decomposition of the supermartingale $(-X_t^-)$*,*
if and only if

$$\sup_{t \in \mathbb{N}} E_P\big(X_t^-\big) < \infty$$

Proof: exercise. Note that since the function $x \mapsto x^+ = x \vee 0$ is convex, by the Jensen inequality for conditional expectations it follows that $(-X_t^-)$ is a supermartingale as well.

6.4.4 L^2 martingales

Martingales bounded in L^2

Proposition 17. *A $(P,\mathbb{F})$-martingale $(M_n : n\in\mathbb{N})$ is bounded in $L^2(P)$, if and only if*

$$\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} E_P\big((\Delta M_k)^2\big) < \infty, \qquad \textit{with } \Delta M_k = M_k - M_{k-1}$$

In this case $M_n \to M_\infty$ P-almost surely and in $L^2(P)$.

Proof

$$E(M_n^2) = E\Bigg(\bigg\{\sum_{k=1}^{n}\Delta M_k\bigg\}^2\Bigg) = \sum_{k=1}^{n} E_P\big((\Delta M_k)^2\big) + 2\sum_{1\le h<k\le n} E_P\big(\Delta M_h \Delta M_k\big) \tag{6.5}$$

where for $h<k$, by tower property of the conditional expectation and the martingale property whe have

$$E_P\big(\Delta M_h \Delta M_k\big) = E_P\big(\Delta M_k E_P(\Delta M_k|\mathcal{F}_h)\big) = 0\ .$$

Since $(M_n : n\in N)$ is bounded in $L^2(P)$, we know that it is an uniformly integrable martingale of the form $M_n = E_P\big(M_\infty\big|\mathcal{F}_n\big)$, where by Doob martingale convergence theorem and the characterization of convergence in $L^1(P)$ $M_\infty(\omega) = \lim\limits_{n\to\infty} M_n(\omega)$ P-almost surely and in $L^1(P)$.

But from (6.5) we see that $(M_n)_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is a Cauchy sequence in the complete space $L^2(P)$, which means that M_∞ is also the limit in $L^2(P)$ sense, since by completeness there exist an $L^2(P)$-limit $\widetilde{M}_\infty$, but this has to be P-almost surely equal M_∞, since the limit in probability is P-a.s. unique □

Predictable Covariation of martingales in $L^2(P)$. Consider the case where $(M_t : t\in\mathbb{N})$ and $(N_t : t\in\mathbb{N})$ are $\mathbb{F}$-martingales with $M_t, N_t\in L^2(\Omega)$ $\forall t\in\mathbb{N}$. For the product N_tM_t we have

$$M_tN_t - M_{t-1}N_{t-1} = N_{t-1}\Delta M_t + M_{t-1}\Delta N_t + \Delta M_t\Delta N_t$$
$$= N_{t-1}\Delta M_t + M_{t-1}\Delta N_t + \Big(\Delta M_t\Delta N_t - E(\Delta M_t\Delta N_t|\mathcal{F}_{t-1})\Big) + E(\Delta M_t\Delta N_t|\mathcal{F}_{t-1})$$

Denote

$$[N,M]_t = \sum_{s=1}^{t}\Delta N_s\Delta M_s, \quad \langle N,M\rangle_t = \sum_{s=1}^{t} E\big(\Delta N_s\Delta M_s\big|\mathcal{F}_{s-1}\big)$$

which are respectively the (discrete) *quadratic covariation* and*predictable covariation* of the pair (N_t, M_t).

By writing the telescopic sum,

$$N_tM_t - N_0M_0 = \big(N_-\cdot M\big)_t + \big(M_-\cdot N\big)_t + [N,M]_t =$$
$$\big(N_-\cdot M\big)_t + \big(M_-\cdot N\big)_t + \big([N,M]_t - \langle N,M\rangle_t\big) + \langle N,M\rangle_t = X_t + \langle N,M\rangle_t$$

where the martingale transforms

$$\big(N_-\cdot M\big)_t = \sum_{s=1}^{t} N_{s-1}\Delta M_s, \quad \big(M_-\cdot N\big)_t = \sum_{s=1}^{t} M_{s-1}\Delta N_s$$

are $\mathbb{F}$-martingales (integrability follows by Cauchy-Schwartz inequality since $M_t, N_t \in L^(P)$). Also $\big([N,M]_t - \langle N,M\rangle_t\big)$ is an $\mathbb{F}$-martingale, and $\langle N,M\rangle_t$ is $\mathbb{F}$, predictable. Therefore the Doob decomposition is

$$N_t M_t = N_0 M_0 + X_t + \langle N,M\rangle_t, \quad \text{with martingale part}$$
$$X_t = \big(N_- \cdot M\big)_t + \big(M_- \cdot N\big)_t + \big([N,M]_t - \langle N,M\rangle_t\big)$$

Note that by taking expectation,

$$E(M_t N_t) - E(M_0 M_0) = E\big((M_t - M_0)(N_t - N_0)\big) = E\big(\langle M,N\rangle_t\big)$$

When $N_t = M_t$, by Jensen's inequality (M_t^2) is a $\mathbb{F}$-submartingale and the predictable variation

$$\langle M\rangle_t = \langle M,M\rangle_t = \sum_{s=1}^{t} E\big((\Delta M_s)^2 \big| \mathcal{F}_{s-1}\big)$$

is non-decreasing.

Theorem 15. *Let $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ a $(P,\mathbb{F})$-martingale in $L^2(P)$ (not necessarily bounded in $L^2(P)$). Then*

$$\lim_{n\to\infty} M_t(\omega)$$

exists P-almost surely on the set $A := \big\{\omega : \ \langle M\rangle_\infty(\omega) < \infty\big\}$.

Proof Let $\tau_n(\omega) = \inf\big\{\omega : \ \langle M\rangle_{t+1} \geq n\big\}$. Note that $\forall \omega \in A$, $\exists N(\omega)$ with $\tau_n(\omega) = +\infty$ for all $n \geq N(\omega)$.

Note that $M_{t\wedge\tau_n}$ is a square integrable martingale with predictable variation $\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n} \leq n$, with $E_P\big(M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n}\big) = E_P\big(\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n}\big) \leq n$.

Therefore

$$\lim_{t\to\infty} M_{t\wedge\tau_n}(\omega) = M_{\tau_n}(\omega)$$

exists P-almost surely and in $L^2(P)$. For $\omega \in A$ and $n \geq N(\omega)$ we have $\tau_n(\omega) = \infty$ and the limit

$$\lim_{t\to\infty} M_t(\omega) = M_\infty(\omega)$$

exists □

6.5 Doob optional sampling and optional stopping theorems

Lemma 15. *Let $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ a supermartingale and $0 \leq \tau(\omega) \leq k$ a bounded stopping time.*

Then $E(X_k|\mathcal{F}_\tau)(\omega) \leq X_\tau$.

Proof For $A \in \mathcal{F}_\tau$ by definition $A \cap \{\tau = t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$. By using the supermartingale property

$$E_P(X_k \mathbf{1}_A) = \sum_{t=0}^{k} E_P\big(X_k \mathbf{1}(A\cap\{\tau = t\})\big) \leq \sum_{t=0}^{k} E_P\big(X_t \mathbf{1}(A\cap\{\tau = t\})\big) = E_P(X_\tau \mathbf{1}_A)$$

Theorem 16. *Let $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ an UI martingale, and τ a stopping time. Then*

$$E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau)(\omega) = M_\tau(\omega)$$

Proof Since $\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge k} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_k$, $k \in \mathbb{N}$ and (M_t) is an UI-martingale

$$E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge k}) = E_P(E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_k)|\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge k}) = E_P(M_k|\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge k})$$

Let's assume that $M_\infty(\omega) \geq 0$, otherwise we work with M^+_∞, M^-_∞ separately, since

$$M_t(\omega) = M_t^{(+)}(\omega) - M_t^{(-)}(\omega) \ , \quad \text{where} \quad M_t^{(\pm)}(\omega) := E_P\big(M^\pm_\infty\big|\mathcal{F}_t\big)(\omega)$$

are uniformly integrable martingales. For $A \in \mathcal{F}_\tau$,

$$E_P\big(M_\infty \mathbf{1}_{A\cap\{\tau\leq k\}}\big) = E_P\big(M_k \mathbf{1}_{A\cap\{\tau\leq k\}}\big)$$

by the martingale property, since $A\cap\{\tau \leq k\}$ is $\mathcal{F}_k$-measurable by the definition of stopped σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_\tau$,

$$= E_P(M_{\tau\wedge k}\mathbf{1}_{A\cap\{\tau\leq k\}}\big) = E_P(M_\tau \mathbf{1}_{A\cap\{\tau\leq k\}}\big) =$$

where we used lemma 15 for the bounded stopping time $(\tau \wedge k) \leq k$ together with the fact that $A \cap \{\tau \leq k\}$ is also $\mathcal{F}_{(\tau\wedge k)}$-measurable. To check this, for all $t \in \mathbb{N}$ we have

$$A \cap \{\tau \leq k\} \cap \{\tau \wedge k \leq t\} = A \cap \{\tau \leq k \wedge t\} \in \mathcal{F}_{(t\wedge k)} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_t$$

Since $\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) \leq k) \uparrow \mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) < \infty)$ as $k \uparrow \infty$, by the monotone convergence theorem it follows

$$E_P(M_\infty \mathbf{1}_A \mathbf{1}(\tau < \infty)) = E_P(M_\tau \mathbf{1}_A \mathbf{1}(\tau < \infty))$$

and since $M_\tau \mathbf{1}(\tau < \infty)$ is $\mathcal{F}_\tau$-measurable, in discrete time this follows since $M_\tau(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) = k) = M_k(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) = k)$, we have

$$E(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau)(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) < \infty) = M_\tau(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) < \infty)$$

The result follows since

$$M_\infty(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) = \infty) = M_\tau(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) = \infty) \quad \square$$

Corollary 9. *Let $\tau(\omega) \geq \sigma(\omega)$ stopping times, and $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ an UI martingale.*

Then $\mathcal{F}_\sigma \subseteq \mathcal{F}_\tau$ and

$$E_P(M_\tau|\mathcal{F}_\sigma) = M_\sigma \tag{6.6}$$

and by taking expectation $E_P(M_\tau) = E_P(M_0)$ for all stopping times τ.

When $\tau(\omega) \leq \sigma(\omega)$ P-almost surely, if the filtration is P-complete, meaning that $\mathcal{F}_0 \supset \mathcal{N}^P = \{A \subset \Omega,\ P(A) = 0\}$ we have the same implications.

Proof*: When $\sigma(\omega) \leq \tau(\omega)$ $\forall\omega \in \Omega$ and $A \in \mathcal{F}_\sigma$,*

$$A \cap \{\tau \leq t\} = A \cap \{\sigma \leq t\} \cap \{\tau \leq t\} \ \in \mathcal{F}_t$$

since $A\cap\{\sigma\le t\}\in\mathcal{F}_t$ *because* $A\in\mathcal{F}_\sigma$*, and* $\{\tau\le t\}\in\mathcal{F}_t$ *since* τ *is a* $\mathbb{F}$*-stopping time.*

More in general, suppose that $\sigma(\omega)\le\tau(\omega)\forall\omega\in N^c$ *with* $P(N)=0$*. Assuming that the filtration is* P *complete, when* $A\in\mathcal{F}_\sigma$

$$A\cap\{\tau\le t\}=\big(A\cap\{\sigma\le t\}\cap\{\tau\le t\}\cap N^c\big)\cup\big(\{\tau\le t\}\cap(A\cap N)\big)\ \in\mathcal{F}_t$$

where $\{\tau\le t\}\in\mathcal{F}_t$*, since* τ *is a stopping time,* $A\cap\{\sigma\le t\}\in\mathcal{F}_t$ *since* $A\in\mathcal{F}_\sigma$*, and both* N^c *and* $(A\cap N)$ *are in* $\mathcal{N}\subset\mathcal{F}_t$ *since the filtration is* P*-complete.*

Now, since $\mathcal{F}_\sigma\subseteq\mathcal{F}_\tau$

$$M_\sigma=E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\sigma)=E_P(E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau)|\mathcal{F}_\sigma)=E_P(M_\tau|\mathcal{F}_\sigma)\tag{6.7}$$

Corollary 10. *If* $(M_t,t\in\mathbb{N})$ *is a martingale and*

$$0\le\sigma(\omega)\le\tau(\omega)\le K\in N\tag{6.8}$$

are bounded stopping times, then

$$E_P(M_\tau|\mathcal{F}_\sigma)=M_\sigma\tag{6.9}$$

Proof apply corollary (9) to $(M_t:t=1\dots,K)$ which is uniformly integrable since it is a finite subset of $L^1(P)$.

Corollary 11. *For a UI martingale* $M_t=E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t)$*, the stopped process* M_t^τ *is also an UI martingale in both filtrations* $(\mathcal{F}_t:t\in\mathbb{N})$ *and* $(\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau}:t\in\mathbb{N})$

Proof By theorem 16 $E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau)=M_\tau$. Because $\tau(\omega)\ge(\tau(\omega)\wedge t)$ are stopping times, by corollary 9

$$E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge t})=E_P(M_\tau|\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge t})=M_{t\wedge t},$$

which is uniformly integrable by lemma 13 □

Here another version of Doob optional stopping theorem

Theorem 17. *Let* τ *be a* $\mathbb{F}$*-stopping time with* $E_P(\tau)<\infty$ *and* $(M_t:t\in\mathbb{N})$ *an* $(\mathbb{F},P)$*-martingale such that for some constant* C

$$E_P\big(|\Delta M_t^\tau|\big|\mathcal{F}_{t-1}\big)=E_P\big(|\Delta M_t|\big|\mathcal{F}_{t-1}\big)\mathbf{1}(\tau>t-1)\le C\ ,$$

P*-almost surely* $\forall t\in\mathbb{N}$*. Then* $E_P(M_\tau)=E_P(M_0)$*.*

Proof Since $E_P(\tau)<\infty$, it follows that $P(\tau<\infty)=1$, which means that $(t\wedge\tau)\uparrow\tau<\infty$ and $M_{t\wedge\tau}\to M_\tau$ P-almost surely. Since the stopped process $M_t^\tau=M_{t\wedge\tau}$ is a martingale, $E(M_{t\wedge\tau})=E(M_0)$. We show that $(M_{t\wedge\tau}:t\in\mathbb{N})$ is a Cauchy sequence in $L^1(P)$: by taking tellescopic sum

$$M_{t\wedge\tau}-M_{s\wedge\tau}=\sum_{k=s+1}^{t}\mathbf{1}(\tau>s-1)\Delta M_s$$

By the triangle inequality and the tower property of the conditional expectation, for $0\le s\le t$

$$E_P\big(|M_{t\wedge\tau}-M_{s\wedge\tau}|\big)\le\sum_{k=s+1}^{t}E_P\big(\mathbf{1}(\tau>s-1)|\Delta M_s|\big)$$

$$=\sum_{k=s+1}^{t}E_P\big(\mathbf{1}(\tau>k-1)E_P(|\Delta M_k||\mathcal{F}_{k-1})\big)\le C\sum_{k=s}^{\infty}P(\tau>k)$$

which goes to zeros as $s \to \infty$, since by Fubini theorem

$$\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} P(\tau > k) = E_P(\tau) < \infty \quad \square$$

Exercise 11. *Since the stopped process can represented as a martingale transform of a bounded predictable integrand one would hope that martingale transforms with respect to a bounded predictable integrand preserves uniform integrability, but this is not true.*

In fact convergence in $L^1(P)$ sense of martingales is tricky. Cherny has constructed an uniformly integrable martingale $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ and a **bounded-** *predictable integrand $(H_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$, (that is $|H_t(\omega)| \le c$ for some constant), such that the martingale transform $(H \cdot X)_t$ is a martingale which is not bounded in $L^1(P)$ and therefore it is not uniformly integrable*

We construct a positive martingale $(X_n(\omega) : n \in \mathbb{N})$ as follows: the filtration is the one generated by the sequence. $\mathcal{F}_n = \sigma(X_1, \dots, X_n)$.

At time t, conditionally on the past, with small probability X_t is rescaled by a very large factor, and continues, and with high probability it is rescaled by a very small factor and stops.

Let

$$a_n = 2n, \quad b_n = \frac{2n}{2n^2 - n + 1}, \quad p_n = \frac{n-1}{2n^2} \quad n \in \mathbb{N}, \quad X_1(\omega) = a_1 = 1, \; A_1 = \Omega,$$
$$A_{n+1} = \{\omega : X_{n+1} = a_1 \cdot \dots \cdot a_{n+1}\} \in \mathcal{F}_{n+1}$$
$$P(X_{n+1} = a_1 a_2 \cdot \dots a_n a_{n+1} | A_n) = p_{n+1}$$
$$P(X_{n+1} = a_1 a_2 \cdot \dots a_n b_{n+1} | A_n) = 1 - p_{n+1}$$
$$P(X_{n+1} = X_n | A_n^c) = 1$$

Note that the process X_n stops the first time the event A_n^c appears, and X_n is a martingale since

$$E(X_{n+1}|\mathcal{F}_n) = X_n \Big(\mathbf{1}_{A_n^c} + \mathbf{1}_{A_n} \{ a_{n+1} p_{n+1} + b_{n+1}(1 - p_{n+1}) \} \Big) = X_n$$

For $n < m$

$$E(|X_m - X_n|) = E(|X_m - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}) = E(|X_m - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) + E(|X_m - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}^c}) =$$

One can check by induction that $Y_{m,n} := (X_m - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}} > 0$ for $m > n$.

$$Y_{n+1,n} = (X_{n+1} - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}} = a_1 \dots a_n (a_{n+1} - 1)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}} \ge 0,$$
$$(X_m - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}} = (X_m - X_{m-1} + X_{m-1} - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}} =$$
$$Y_{m-1,n} + (X_m - X_{m-1})\mathbf{1}_{A_{m-1}} =$$
$$Y_{m-1,n} + a_2 \dots a_{m-1} \Big(\mathbf{1}_{A_m}(a_m - 1) + \mathbf{1}_{A_{m-1}} \mathbf{1}_{A_m^c}(b_m - 1) \Big)$$

Now when $\omega \in A^c_{m-1}$ the second term is zero and the first term is non-negative by induction. When $\omega \in A_{m-1}$ this gives

$$= a_2 \dots a_{m-1}\Big(1 + \mathbf{1}(A_m)(a_m - 1) + \mathbf{1}_{A^c_m}(b_m - 1)\Big) \geq 0$$

Using the positivity property of $Y_{m,n}$,

$$E(|X_m - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) = E((X_m - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) = E((X_{n+1} - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) = E(|X_{n+1} - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}})$$

so that

$$E(|X_m - X_n|) = E(|X_m - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) + E(|X_m - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{n+1}}) =$$
$$E((X_m - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) + E(|X_{n+1} - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{n+1}})$$
$= E((X_{n+1} - X_n)\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) + E(|X_{n+1} - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{n+1}})$ by the martingale property,
$$= E(|X_{n+1} - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}\mathbf{1}_{A_{n+1}}) + E(|X_{n+1} - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{n+1}}) =$$
$$E(|X_{n+1} - X_n|\mathbf{1}_{A_n}) = a_2 \dots a_n \times p_2 \dots p_n \times \big((a_{n+1} - 1)p_{n+1} + (1 - b_{n+1})(1 - p_{n+1})\big) =$$
$$a_2 \dots a_n p_2 \dots p_n \times \big(1 - b_{n+1} + (a_{n+1} + b_{n+1} - 2)p_{n+1}\big)$$
$$\leq a_2 \dots a_n p_2 \dots p_n (a_{n+1}p_{n+1} + 1) = \frac{1}{n}\left(\frac{n}{n+1} + 1\right) \leq 2/n$$

therefore X_n is a Cauchy sequence and it converges in $L^1(P)$, which means that it is an UI martingale.

Consider now the martingale transform $(H \cdot X)_t$ of the bounded deterministic integrand

$$H_n = \mathbf{1}(n \text{ is even })$$

We show that $(H \cdot X)_t$ is not bounded in L^1 !

For $m > n$,

$$E\left(\left|\mathbf{1}_{A_{2n}}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{2n+1}}(H \cdot X)_{2m}\right|\right) = E\left(\mathbf{1}_{A_{2n}}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{2n+1}}\sum_{k=1}^{n}(X_{2k} - X_{2k-1})\right)$$
$$\geq E\left(\mathbf{1}_{A_{2n}}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{2n+1}}(X_{2n} - X_{2n-1})\right) \qquad ,$$

since the remaining terms are non-negative on the event $\mathbf{1}_{A_{2n}}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{2n+1}}$,

$$= p_2 \dots p_{2n}(1 - p_{2n+1})a_2 \dots a_{2n-1}(a_{2n} - 1) \geq \frac{1}{4}p_2 \dots p_{2n}a_2 \dots a_{2n} = \frac{1}{8n}$$

We have

$$\Omega = A^c_1 \cup (A_1 \cap A^c_2) \cup \dots \cup (A_{2m} \cap A^c_{2m+1}) \cup A_{2m+1}$$

where the union is taken over disjoint sets,

$$E_P\left(\left|(H \cdot X)_{2m}\right|\right) \geq \sum_{n=1}^{m} E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_{A_{2n}}\mathbf{1}_{A^c_{2n+1}}\left|(H \cdot X)_{2m}\right|\right) \geq \sum_{n=1}^{m}\frac{1}{8n} \to \infty$$

as $m \to \infty$, the martingale $(H \cdot X)_n$ is not bounded in $L^1(P)$.

Corollary 12. *Let $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ an UI submartingale with Doob decomposition*

$$X_t = X_0 + M_t + A_t$$

where M_t is a martingale and A_t is a predictable non-decreasing process with $M_0 = A_0 = 0$.

Then

1. *(M_t) is an UI-martingale and $E_P(A_\infty) < \infty$.*
2. *For every stopping time τ*

$$E(X_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau)(\omega) \geq X_\tau(\omega)$$

Proof By Doob forward martingale convergence theorem

$$\exists X_\infty = \lim_{t\to\infty} X_t(\omega)$$

P-almost surely and in $L^1(P)$ sense. By monotonicity $A_t(\omega) \uparrow A_\infty(\omega)$ P-a.s. and by the monotone convergence theorem $E(A_t) \uparrow E_P(A_\infty)$. Since X_t is uniformly integrable $\forall t$

$$E_P(A_t) = E_P(X_t - X_0) \leq \sup_{t\in\mathbb{N}} E_P(|X_t - X_0|) < \infty$$

and $A_t \to A_\infty \in L^1(P)$.

Therefore

$$M_t \to M_\infty = X_\infty - X_0 - A_\infty$$

P-a.s. and in $L^1(P)$.

For a stopping time τ, we have since M_t is an UI-martingale

$$E_P(X_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau) = X_0 + E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau) + E_P(A_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau) = X_0 + M_\tau + A_\tau + E_P(A_\infty - A_\tau|\mathcal{F}_\tau)$$

where the last term on the right hand side is non-negative □

Lemma 16. *Let $(X_t(\omega) : t \in \mathbb{N})$ be a non-negative martingale. Since it is non-negative, it is automatically bounded in $L^1(P)$, by Doob convergence theorem exists $\lim_{t\to\infty} X_t(\omega) = X_\infty(\omega)$ P-almost surely with $X_\infty \in L^1(P)$. Then X_t is uniformly integrable if and only if $E(X_\infty) = E(X_0)$*

Proof

Necessity follows from the characterization of $L^1(P)$-convergence. For sufficiency, by Fatou lemma for $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$

$$E_P(X_\infty \mathbf{1}_A) \leq \liminf_{T\to\infty} E(X_T \mathbf{1}_A) = E(X_t \mathbf{1}_A)$$

which gives the supermartingale property at $T = \infty$:

$$E_P(X_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t) \leq X_t$$

Now by assumption

$$0 = E_P(X_t - X_\infty) = E_P\big(X_t - E_P(X_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t)\big)$$

which means $X_t = E_P(X_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t)$ P-almost surely □

6.6 Change of measure and Radon-Nikodym theorem

Definition 30. *Let μ and ν positive measures on the probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$.*

We say that ν is absolutely continuous with respect to μ, (also μ dominates ν) if for all $A \in \mathcal{F}$ $\mu(A) = 0 \Longrightarrow \nu(A) = 0$. In this case we use the notation $\nu \ll \mu$.

Sometimes we need absolute continuity with respect to some sub-σ-algebra $\mathcal{G} \subseteq \mathcal{F}$. We say that μ dominates ν on $\mathcal{G}$ and denote $\nu \overset{\mathcal{G}}{\ll} \mu$.

When both $\mu \ll \nu$ and $\nu \ll \mu$ we say that the measures are equivalent (that is they have the same null sets) and denote $\mu \sim \nu$.

Lemma 17. *Let $Q \ll P$ be probability measures on the space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$. Then for all $\varepsilon > 0$ there is $\delta > 0$ such that for $A \in \mathcal{F}$ $P(A) < \delta \Longrightarrow Q(A) < \varepsilon$*

Proof Otherwise there is $\varepsilon > 0$ and a sequence $(A_n : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq \mathcal{F}$ with $P(A_n) \le 2^{-n}$ and $Q(A_n) \ge \varepsilon > 0$ By Borel Cantelli lemma $P(\limsup A_n) = 0$, while by reverse Fatou lemma

$$Q(\limsup A_n) \ge \limsup Q(A_n) \ge \varepsilon > 0$$

which is in contradiction with the assumption $Q \ll P$ $\square$

Theorem 18. *(Radon-Nikodym) Let μ and ν σ-finite positive measures on the measurable space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$. When $\nu \ll \mu$, there is a measurable function $Z : (\Omega, \mathcal{F}) \to (\mathbb{R}^+, \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+))$, such that the change of measure formula holds*

$$\nu(A) = \int_\Omega Z(\omega) \mathbf{1}_A(\omega) \mu(d\omega) \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}$$

Proof Since both μ and ν are σ-finite, there is a countable partition

$$\Omega = \bigcup_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \Omega_n$$

of disjoint measurable sets, such that both $\mu(\Omega)_n, \nu(\Omega)_n < \infty$. By considering on each Ω_n the probability measures

$$P_n(d\omega) = \mu(d\omega)/\mu(\Omega_n) \text{ and } Q_n(d\omega) = \nu(d\omega)/\nu(\Omega_n) ,$$

we see that it is enough to prove the theorem for probability measures $Q \ll P$.

We assume first that $\mathcal{F}$ is *countably generated* (we say also *separable*) $\mathcal{F} = \sigma(F_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$ where $\{F_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \subseteq \mathbb{N}$. This is the case when $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ is a Borel space. We will drop this assumption later.

Consider the filtration $\{\mathcal{F}_n\}$ where $\mathcal{F}_n = \sigma(F_1, \dots, F_n)$, with $\mathcal{F} = \bigvee_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \mathcal{F}_n$.

For each n, by taking intesections of $F_1, \dots F_n$, we find a $\mathcal{F}_n$-measurable partition of Ω $\{A_1^{(n)}, \dots, A_{m_n}^{(n)}\}$ with $\mathcal{F}_n = \sigma(A_k^{(n)} : k = 1, \dots, m_n)$.

We define the $\mathcal{F}_n$ measurable random variable

$$Z_n(\omega) = \sum_{k=1}^{m_n} \frac{Q(A_k^{(n)})}{P(A_k^{(n)})} \mathbf{1}(\omega \in A_k^{(n)})$$

with the convention that $0/0 = 0$ (or if you like $0/0 = 1$, it does not matter).

Note that by absolute continuity, $Q(A_k^{(n)}) = 0$ when $P(A_k^{(n)}) = 0$ so that $Z_n(\omega)$ takes values in $[0, +\infty)$.

It follows that $Q(A) = E_P(Z_n \mathbf{1}_A)$ $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_n$.

On fact it is enough to check this property for some $A = A_k^{(n)}$ $k \in \{1, \dots, m_n\}$, since these sets generate the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_n$. But this follows directly from the definition.

Note that for every $\mathcal{F}_n$-measurable random variable $X(\omega)$ (which is necessarily a simple r.v.) it follows directly that

$$E_Q(X) = E_P(XZ_n)$$

Note also that $E_P(Z_n) = Q(\Omega) = 1$.

The process $(Z_n(\omega))_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is a $(P, \{\mathcal{F}_n\})$-martingale. We have seen that (Z_n) is adapted and it is P-integrable since it takes finitely many finite values.

For all $A \in \mathcal{F}_n$ also $A \in \mathcal{F}_{n+1}$, so that

$$E_P(Z_n \mathbf{1}_A) = Q(A) = E_P(Z_{n+1} \mathbf{1}_A)$$

which by definition of conditional expectation means

$$E_P(Z_{n+1}|\mathcal{F}_n)(\omega) = Z_n(\omega).$$

Since $(Z_n(\omega))$ is a non-negative martingale, in particular it is a supermartingale bounded from below, and by Doob forward martingale convergence theorem it follows that P almost surely exists

$$Z_\infty(\omega) = \lim_{n\to\infty} Z_n(\omega)$$

and $Z_\infty \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$. In order to define $Z(\omega)$ for all ω we take the $\limsup$.

In order to show that $Q(A) = E_P(Z_\infty \mathbf{1}_A)$ $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}$, since the sets F_n generate the σ-algebra, it is enough to show that $Q(F_n) = E_P(Z_\infty \mathbf{1}_{F_n})$ $\forall n$.

Since $Q(F_n) = E_P(Z_m F_n)$ for all $m \geq n$, in order to show that

$$E_P(Z_\infty F_n) = \lim_{m\to\infty} E_P(Z_m F_n) = Q(F_n) \ .$$

Let's check uniform P-integrability for the martingale (Z_n).

Since $Q \ll P$, by lemma 17 for given $\varepsilon > 0$ we can find $\delta > 0$ such that for $A \in \mathcal{F}$ and $P(A) < \delta$ follows $Q(A) < \varepsilon$.

By Chebychev inequality

$$P(Z_n > K) < K^{-1} E_P(Z_n) = K^{-1} \quad \forall n$$

Choose $K > \delta^{-1}$. Since $\{\omega : Z_n(\omega) > K\} \in \mathcal{F}_n$, by the change of measure formula

$$\sup_n E_P(Z_n \mathbf{1}(Z_n > K)) = \sup_n Q(Z_n > K) < \varepsilon$$

which is the UI-condition:

$$\lim_{K\to\infty} \sup_n E_P(Z_n \mathbf{1}(Z_n > K)) = 0$$

So far we have proved the R-N theorem for countably generated σ-algebrae. We extend the proof by using convergence of generalized sequences.

We recall this concept from topology:

Definition 31. *In a topological space $(E, \mathcal{T})$ a net is a generalized sequence $(x_\alpha : \alpha \in \mathcal{I})$ indexed by a directed set, that is a partially ordered set $(\mathcal{I}, \leq)$ such that for every two elements $\alpha, \beta \in \mathcal{I}$ there is an element $\alpha \vee \beta$*

$$\alpha \vee \beta \geq \alpha, \alpha \vee \beta \geq \beta . \gamma \geq \alpha \text{ and } \gamma \geq \beta \Longrightarrow \gamma \geq \alpha \vee \beta$$

We say that $x_\alpha \to x \in E$ when for every open set $U \ni x$ there is an element $\bar{\alpha}$ such that $x_\alpha \in U$ for all $\alpha \geq \bar{\alpha}$.

When $\mathcal{F}$ is not countably generated (we say also separable), we consider the partially order set

$$\mathbb{G} := \left\{ \mathcal{G} \subseteq \mathcal{F} : \mathcal{G} \text{ is a countably generated } \sigma\text{-algebra} \right\} .$$

Here the ordering relation is the inclusion $\subseteq$. Note that when $\mathcal{G}, \mathcal{G}'' \in \mathbb{G}$, $\mathcal{G}' \vee \mathcal{G}'' := \sigma(\mathcal{G}', \mathcal{G}'')$ is a separable sub σ-algebra as well.

For each $\mathcal{G} \in \mathbb{G}$ we have shown that there is a random variable $0 \leq Z_{\mathcal{G}}(\omega) \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{G}, P)$ such that the change of variable formula holds in $\mathcal{G}$:

$$Q(A) = E_P(Z_{\mathcal{G}} \mathbf{1}_A) \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{G}$$

We show that $(Z_{\mathcal{G}} : \mathcal{G} \in \mathbb{G})$ is a Cauchy net in $L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$, and by completeness it has a limit $Z \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$.

By Cauchy net we mean the following: for all $\varepsilon > 0$ there is a $\overline{\mathcal{G}} \in \mathbb{G}$ such that if $\mathcal{G}' \supseteq \overline{\mathcal{G}}$, $\mathcal{G}'' \supseteq \overline{\mathcal{G}}$, $\mathcal{G}', \mathcal{G}'' \in \mathbb{G}$, then

$$E_P\big(|Z_{\mathcal{G}'} - Z_{\mathcal{G}''}|\big) < \varepsilon$$

By the triangle inequality this it is equivalent to

$$E_P\big(|Z_{\bar{\mathcal{G}}} - Z_{\mathcal{G}'}|\big) < \varepsilon/2, \quad \forall \mathcal{G}' \in \mathbb{G} \text{ with } \mathcal{G}' \supseteq \bar{\mathcal{G}}$$

If $(Z_{\mathcal{G}})$ was not a Cauchy net we would find some $\varepsilon > 0$ and a sequence $(\mathcal{G}_n : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq \mathbb{G}$ such that $\mathcal{G}_n \subseteq \mathcal{G}_{n+1}$ and

$$E_P\big(|Z_{\mathcal{G}_n} - Z_{\mathcal{G}_{n+1}}|\big) \geq \varepsilon > 0$$

Let $\mathcal{G}_\infty = \bigvee_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \mathcal{G}_n$. $\mathcal{G}_\infty \in \mathbb{G}$ and by the previous argument $(Z_{\mathcal{G}_n} : n \in \mathbb{N} \cup \{ +\infty\})$ would be an uniformly integrable martingale in the filtration $\{\mathcal{G}_n\}$, which necessarily is convergent in $L^1(P)$, giving a contradiction.

Remark 11. *In a complete metric space (E, d) every Cauchy net $(x_\alpha : \alpha \in \mathcal{I})$ is convergent, that is there is an element $x^* \in E$ such that $\forall \varepsilon > 0$ $\exists \overline{\alpha}$ with $d(x^*, x_\alpha) \leq \varepsilon$ $\forall \alpha \geq \overline{\alpha}$.*

Proof: for every n let $\overline{\alpha}_n$ such that $d(x_{\overline{\alpha}_n}, x_\alpha) \leq n^{-1}$ $\forall \alpha \geq \overline{\alpha}_n$, and we can also choose $\overline{\alpha}_n \geq \overline{\alpha}_{n-1}$ (we have to assume the axiom of choice, allowing to choose elements from uncountable sets).

Therefore $(x_{\overline{\alpha}_n})$ is a Cauchy sequence and it has a limit $x \in E$, which does not depend on the choice of the sequence $\bar{\alpha}_n$, since for another choice $\widetilde{\alpha}_n$ converging to a limit $\widetilde{x}$ one would have by the triangle inequality

$$d\big(x, \widetilde{x}\big) \leq d\big(x_{\bar{\alpha}_n \vee \widetilde{\alpha}_n}, x\big) + d\big(x_{\bar{\alpha}_n \vee \widetilde{\alpha}_n}, \widetilde{x}\big) \leq \frac{2}{n} \quad \forall n \in \mathbb{N} ,$$

and we say that x is limit of the net (x_α).

Since $L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ is complete, the generalized Cauchy sequence $(Z_{\mathcal{G}} : \mathcal{G} \in \mathbb{G})$ has necessarily a limit $Z_\infty(\omega) \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$. Let's check the change of measure formula: consider $A \in \mathcal{F}$ and take $\mathcal{G} \in \mathbb{G}$ such that

$$E_P(|Z_\infty - Z_{\mathcal{G}'}|) < \varepsilon$$

for all $\mathcal{G}' \supseteq \mathcal{G}$, $\mathcal{G}' \in \mathbb{G}$. Define $\widetilde{\mathcal{G}} := \sigma(\mathcal{G} \vee A) \in \mathbb{G}$. Since

$$Q(A) = E_P(Z_{\widetilde{\mathcal{G}}} \mathbf{1}_A)$$

we have

$$\Big| E_P(Z_\infty \mathbf{1}_A) - Q(A) \Big| \le E_P\Big(\big| Z_\infty - Z_{\widetilde{\mathcal{G}}} \big| \Big) < \varepsilon$$

with arbitrarily small ε, and the change of measure formula holds □

6.7 The Likelihood ratio process

Consider a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ equipped with a filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \in T)$, $(T = \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{R})$ and two probability measures P, Q. such that Q dominates P *locally*

$$P \overset{loc}{\ll} Q, \text{ which means } P_t \ll Q_t \quad \forall t \in T, t < \infty$$

where P_t, Q_t are the restriction of P, Q on the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_t$. In other words, if $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$ for some $t < \infty$ and $Q(A) = 0$, then $P(A) = 0$.

By the Radon-Nikodym theorem,there is a likelihood-ratio process

$$0 \le Z_t(\omega) = \frac{dP_t}{dQ_t}(\omega) \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, Q), \quad 0 \le t < \infty,$$

such that $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_t$, the change of measure formula holds

$$P(A) = E_Q(Z_t \mathbf{1}_A)$$

Proposition 18. *The process $(Z_t(\omega), 0 \le t < \infty)$ is a $(Q, \mathbb{F})$-martingale.*

Proof. For $s \le t$, $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s \subseteq \mathcal{F}_t$ the martingale propery follows:

$$P(A) = E_Q(Z_s \mathbf{1}_A) = E_P(Z_t \mathbf{1}_A)$$

Uniformly integrable likelihood-process Consider the discrete time case with $T = \mathbb{N}$. When $Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$, $(Z_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is a non-negative $(P, \mathbb{F})$-martingale and by Doob's convergence theorem there is $Z_\infty(\omega) \in L^1(P)$ such that

$$Z_t(\omega) \to Z_\infty(\omega) \quad Q \text{ and } P \text{ almost surely },$$

and by Fatou lemma $E_P(Z_\infty) \le \liminf_n E_P(Z_n) = E_P(Z_0) = 1$.

By lemma (16) $(Z_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is uniformly integrable with

$$Z_t(\omega) = E_P(Z_\infty | \mathcal{F}_t)(\omega) \text{ and } Z_t \overset{L^1(P)}{\longrightarrow} Z_\infty,$$

if and only if $E_P(Z_\infty) = 1$. In this case $Q \ll P$ not just locally but also on the σ-algebra

$$\mathcal{F}_\infty = \bigvee_{t \in \mathbb{N}} \mathcal{F}_t$$

Martingales in mathematical statistics We continue with a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ equipped with the filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \geq 0)$, and consider a family of probability measures $(P_\theta(d\omega) : \theta \in \Theta)$, with parameter space $(\Theta \subseteq \mathbb{R}^d)$, such that $P_\theta \overset{loc}{\ll} Q \ \forall \theta \in \Theta$.

Denote

$$Z_t^\theta(\omega) = \frac{dP_t^\theta}{dQ_t}(\omega), \quad t \geq 0.$$

Assume

1. i) For $t > 0$ and $\forall \omega$, $Z_t^\theta(\omega)$ is continuously differentiable w.r.t. θ, with random gradient vector

$$V_t^\theta(\omega) = \nabla_\theta \log Z_t^\theta(\omega) = \left(\frac{\partial \log Z_t^\theta(\omega)}{\partial \theta_i} : i = 1, \ldots, d \right) = \left(\frac{1}{Z_t^\theta(\omega)} \frac{\partial Z_t^\theta(\omega)}{\partial \theta_i} : i = 1, \ldots, d \right)$$

such that

$$\lim_{\varepsilon \to 0} \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \{ Z_t^{\theta + \varepsilon h} - Z_t^\theta \} = (h, V_t(\theta)) Z_t^\theta \qquad \forall h \in \mathbb{R}^d, \omega \in \Omega$$

$V_t^\theta(\omega)$ is called *score* .

In order to interchange the order of differentiation and integration we also assume

2. $\nabla_\theta Z_t^\theta$ is locally uniformly dominated at θ, i.e. there is an U neighbourhood of θ and a random variable $0 \leq D_t(\theta, \omega) \in L^1(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, Q)$ and

$$|\nabla_\theta Z_t^\theta(\eta)| < D_t(\theta), \qquad \forall \eta \in U.$$

For $B \in \mathcal{F}_t$, by Fubini and dominated convergence

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B Z_t^\theta dQ = \lim_{\varepsilon \to 0} \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B (Z_t^{\theta + \varepsilon e_i} - Z_t^\theta) dQ =$$

$$\lim_{\varepsilon \to 0} \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B \left(\int_0^\varepsilon \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} Z_t^{\theta + \epsilon e_i} d\epsilon \right) dQ = \lim_{\varepsilon \to 0} \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \int_0^\varepsilon \left(\int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} Z_t^{\theta + \epsilon e_i} dQ \right) d\epsilon$$

$$= \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} Z_t^\theta dQ.$$

Moreover $B \in \mathcal{F}_s$,

$$\int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B E_Q \big(\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} Z_t^\theta \big| \mathcal{F}_s \big) dQ = \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} Z_t^\theta dQ =$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B Z_t^\theta dQ =$$

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B Z_s^\theta dQ = \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} Z_s^\theta dQ = \int_\Omega \mathbf{1}_B \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} E_Q (Z_t^\theta | \mathcal{F}_s) dQ$$

and we can change the order of derivation and integration

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} E_Q (Z_t^\theta | \mathcal{F}_s) = E_Q \big(\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} Z_t^\theta \big| \mathcal{F}_s \big)$$

Proposition 19. *Under the previous assumption on the statistical model in a neighbourhood of* θ, $\{V_t(\theta)\}_{t\geq 0}$ *is a* $(P^\theta, \mathbb{F})$*-martingale: For* $0 \leq s \leq t$,

$$E_{P^\theta}(V_t(\theta)|\mathcal{F}_s) = \frac{E_Q(Z_t^\theta V_t(\theta)|\mathcal{F}_s)}{E_Q(Z_t^\theta|\mathcal{F}_s)} = \frac{1}{Z_s^\theta} E_Q\big(\frac{\partial Z_t^\theta}{\partial\theta}|\mathcal{F}_s\big) =$$
$$\frac{1}{Z_s^\theta}\frac{\partial}{\partial\theta} E_Q(Z_t^\theta|\mathcal{F}_s) = \frac{1}{Z_s^\theta}\frac{\partial Z_s^\theta}{\partial\theta} = \frac{\partial \log Z_s^\theta}{\partial\theta} = V_s(\theta)$$

Essentially we had to assume that the limit $\nabla_\theta Z_t^\theta \in L^1(Q)$.

Since $\varepsilon^{-1}(Z_t^{\theta+\varepsilon h} - Z_t^\theta) \in L^1(Q)\ \forall\varepsilon > 0$, is natural to use a weaker definition based on L^1-convergence instead of pointwise convergence.

Definition 32. *: A statistical experiment*

$(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, Q_t, (P_t^\theta)_{\theta\in\Theta})$ *is* L^1*-differentiable at* θ*, if there is a random score-vector* $V_t(\theta) \in L^1(P^\theta)$ *such that* $\forall h \in \mathbb{R}^d$

$$\lim_{\varepsilon\to 0} E_Q\left(\left|\frac{1}{\varepsilon}\{Z_t^{\theta+\varepsilon h} - Z_t^\theta\} - (h, V_t(\theta))Z_t^\theta\right|\right) = 0$$

We show that under this generalized definition $V_t(\theta)$ as a random process is a $(P^\theta, \mathbb{F})$-martingale.

Proposition 20. *: If a time* $t \geq 0$ *the statistical experiment* $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, Q_t, (P_t^\theta)_{\theta\in\Theta})$ *is* L^1*-differentiable at* θ *, then* $\forall 0 \leq s \leq t$ *the statistical experiment* $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_s, Q_s, (P_s^\theta)_{\theta\in\Theta})$ *is* L^1*-differentiable at* θ *, with random score-vector*

$$V_s(\theta) = E_{P_\theta}(V_t(\theta)|\mathcal{F}_s)$$

Proof: let $B \in \mathcal{F}_s$,

$$E_Q\left(\left\{\frac{1}{\varepsilon}\{Z_t^{\theta+\varepsilon h} - Z_t^\theta\} - (h, V_t(\theta))Z_t^\theta\right\}\mathbf{1}_B\right)$$
$$= E_Q\left(\left\{\frac{1}{\varepsilon}\{Z_s^{\theta+\varepsilon h} - Z_s^\theta\} - (h, E_Q(Z_t^\theta V_t(\theta)|\mathcal{F}_s))\right\}\mathbf{1}_B\right)$$
$$= E_Q\left(\left\{\frac{1}{\varepsilon}\{Z_s^{\theta+\varepsilon h} - Z_s^\theta\} - \big(h, \frac{E_Q(Z_t^\theta V_t(\theta)|\mathcal{F}_s)}{E_Q(Z_t^\theta|\mathcal{F}_s)}\big)Z_s^\theta\right\}\mathbf{1}_B\right) =$$
$$E_Q\left(\left\{\frac{1}{\varepsilon}\{Z_s^{\theta+\varepsilon h} - Z_s^\theta\} - \big(h,\ E_{P^\theta}(V_t(\theta)|\mathcal{F}_s)\big)Z_s^\theta\right\}\mathbf{1}_B\right) \to 0 \text{ when } \varepsilon \to 0$$

and since this holds $\forall B \in \mathcal{F}_s$,

$$E_Q\left(\left|\frac{1}{\varepsilon}\{Z_s^{\theta+\varepsilon h} - Z_s^\theta\} - \big(h,\ E_{P^\theta}(V_t(\theta)|\mathcal{F}_s)\big)Z_s^\theta\right|\right) \to 0 \text{ when } \varepsilon \to 0$$

Exercise 12. *(Laplace's two sided exponential distribution):*

For $P^\theta(dx) = \frac{1}{2}\exp(-|x-\theta|)dx$*, the density* $f^\theta(x)$ *is not differentiable with respect to* θ *at the point* $\theta_0 = x$*.*

Nevertheless it is L^1*-differentiable with score*

$$V(\theta, x) = -sign(\theta - x)$$

Notes The story continues: since $Z_t^\theta \in L^1(Q)$, it follows that $\sqrt{Z_t^\theta} \in L^2(Q)$. When $\sqrt{Z_t^\theta}$ is L^2-differentiable, $V_t(\theta)$ is a square integrable $(P^\theta, \mathbb{F})$-martingale, we define *Fisher's information* as

$$I_t(\theta) = E_{P^\theta}(V_t(\theta)^\top V_t(\theta))$$

which is studied by using martingale theory.

6.8 Martingale maximal inequalities

For a process $(X_t : t \in T)$, $T = \mathbb{R}$ or $\mathbb{N}$ we define the running maximum

$$X_t^* = \max_{0 \le s \le t} X_s(\omega)$$

Theorem 19. *Let $0 \le X_s(\omega), s \in \mathbb{N}$ a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-submartingale.*
Then for $c > 0, T \in \mathbb{N}$,

$$cP\big(X_T^* \ge c\big) \le E_P\big(X_T \mathbf{1}(X_T^* > c)\big) \le E_P\big(X_T\big)$$

Proof *Let $A := \{\omega : X_T^*(\omega) \ge c\}$ and*

$$A_t := \big\{\omega : X_1(\omega) < c, \dots, X_{t-1}(\omega) < c, X_t(\omega) \ge c\big\}, \quad A = \bigcup_{t=1}^{T} A_t,$$

with $A_t \cap A_s = \emptyset$ for $s \ne t$. By the submartingale property

$$E_P(X_T \mathbf{1}_A) = \sum_{s=1}^{T} E_P(X_T \mathbf{1}_{A_s}) \ge \sum_{s=1}^{T} E_P(X_s \mathbf{1}_{A_s}) \ge c \sum_{s=1}^{T} P(A_s) = cP(A)$$

Lemma 18. *Let $X(\omega) \ge 0, Y(\omega) \ge 0$ random variables with $Y \in L^p(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$, $p > 1$ for which*

$$cP(X > c) \le E_P(Y \mathbf{1}(X > c)), \quad c > 0$$

then

$$\| X \|_p \le q \| Y \|_p \qquad \textit{with} \ \left(\frac{1}{p} + \frac{1}{q}\right) = 1$$

Proof Assume first that $X \in L^p$. By Fubini's theorem

$$E_P(X^p) = \int_\Omega \left(\int_0^{X(\omega)} p t^{p-1} dt \right) P(d\omega) = \int_0^\infty P(X \ge t) p t^{p-1} dt \le$$

$$\frac{p}{p-1} \int_0^\infty t P(X \ge t)(p-1) t^{p-2} dt \le q \int_0^\infty E_P\big(Y \mathbf{1}(X \ge t)\big)(p-1) t^{p-2} dt \le$$

$$qE_P\left(Y \int_0^{X(\omega)} (p-1) t^{p-2} dt \right) = qE_P(Y X^{p-1})$$

$$(\text{ Hölder }) \ \le qE_P(Y^p)^{1/p} E_P(X^{q(p-1)})^{1/q} = q \| Y \|_p \| X \|_p^{p-1} \ .$$

Without assuming that $X \in L^p$, take the truncated r.v.

$$X^{(n)}(\omega) := X(\omega) \wedge n \uparrow X(\omega) \text{ as } n \uparrow \infty$$

and that $\{\omega : X(\omega) \wedge n \geq c\} = \emptyset$ for $n < c$, while for $n \geq c$, $\{\omega : X(\omega) \wedge n \geq c\} = \{\omega : X(\omega) \geq c\}$. The lemma applies to $X^{(n)}$ and the result for X follows by the monotone convergence theorem □

Theorem 20. *(Doob's L^p maximal inequality) Let $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ a martingale with $M_t \in L^p$ $\forall t \in \mathbb{N}$. Then for $1 < p < \infty, T \in \mathbb{N}$,*

$$\| M_T^* \|_p \leq q \| M_T \|_p$$

Proof $|M_t|$ is a submartingale, by the maximal inequality

$$cP\big(|M_T^*| > c\big) \leq E_P\big(|M_T|\mathbf{1}(|M_T^*| > c)\big)$$

and we to apply the previous result with $X = |M_T^*|$ and $Y = |M_T|$.

Corollary 13. *When $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is a martingale in $L^2(P)$, we obtain*

$$E_P\big((M_T^*)^2\big) \leq 4E_P\big(M_T^2\big) = 4\Big\{E_P(M_0^2) + E_P\big(\langle M, M\rangle\big)\Big\}$$

Corollary 14. *If $1 < p < \infty$ and $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is a martingale with $M_t \in L^p(P)$ $\forall t$,*

$$\| M_\infty^* \|_{L^p} \leq \frac{p}{p-1} \sup_{t \in \mathbb{N}} \| M_t \|_{L^p}$$
$$cP(|M_\infty^*| > c) \leq \sup_{t \in \mathbb{N}} E_P(|M_t|)$$

Proof By the monotone convergence of expectations. For the second inequality apply first Doob maximal inequality to the submartingale $|M_t|$.

Kakutani's theorem and likelihood ratio process On a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ consider a sequence of random variables $(X_n(\omega) : n \in \mathbb{N})$ which generate the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_n)$, $\mathcal{F}_n = \sigma(X_1, \dots, X_n)$.

We consider two probability measures P and Q such that the random variables $(X_n(\omega))$ form an independent sequence under both measures P and Q.

$Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$ (P dominates Q locally), which means that for all n and for all $A_n \in \mathcal{F}_n$, $P(A_n) = 0 \Longrightarrow Q(A_n) = 0$.

By the Radon-Nikodym theorem, for each $n \in \mathbb{N}$ there is an $\mathcal{F}_n$-measurable Radon-Nikodym derivative

$$0 \leq Z_n(\omega) = \frac{dQ_n}{dP_n}(\omega) \text{ such that } Q(A) = E_P\big(Z_n \mathbf{1}_{A_n}\big) \quad \forall A \in \mathcal{F}_n$$

where Q_n and P_n are the restrictions of Q and P on the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_n$.

Now $Z_n(\omega)$ is a martigale, since if $A \in \mathcal{F}_m$ then $A \in \mathcal{F}_n$ $\forall m \geq n$ and by using twice the change of measure formula

$$E_P\big(Z_m \mathbf{1}_A\big) = Q(A) = E_P\big(Z_n \mathbf{1}_A\big)$$

Let's assume that $X_n(\omega) \in \mathbb{R}^d$ with densities $Q(X_n \in dx) = g_n(x)dx$ and $P(X_n \in dx) = f_n(x)dx$.

By assumption outside a set of Lebesgue measure 0, $g_n(x) = 0$ when $f_n(x) = 0$. In particular the function

$$z_n(x) = \frac{g_n(x)}{f_n(x)}$$

is well defined outside a set of Lebesgue measure 0.

It follows that

$$Z_n(\omega) = z_1(X_1(\omega))z_2(X_2(\omega))\dots z_n(X_n(\omega))$$

Kakutani's theorem says that Z_n is UI martingale if and only if

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} E_P\big(\sqrt{z_n(X_n)}\big) > 0$$
$$\iff \sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\Big(1 - E_P\big(\sqrt{z_n(X_n)}\big)\Big) < \infty$$

Theorem 21. *(Kakutani) On a probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ let $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ P-independent random variables with $X_t(\omega) \geq 0$ and $E_P(X_t) = 1$.*

Let $\mathcal{F}_t = \sigma(X_1, \dots, X_t)$ and

$$M_t = X_1 X_2 \dots X_t, \quad a_t = \big\{E(\sqrt{X_t})\big\} \in (0, 1]$$

M_t is a non-negative $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-martingale with $E(M_t) = 1$ and by Doob forward convergence theorem it has P-a.s. limit $M_\infty(\omega)$ as $t \to \infty$, with $M_\infty \in L^1(P)$, $E(M_\infty) \in [0, 1]$. The following statements are equivalent:

1. *M_t is uniformly integrable*
2. *$E_P(M_\infty) = 1$*
3. *$\prod_{t=1}^{\infty} a_t > 0$*
4. *$\sum_{t=1}^{\infty}(1 - a_t) < \infty$*

Otherwise $M_\infty(\omega) = 0$ P a.s, and P and Q are mutually singular on $\mathcal{T}_\infty = \bigcap_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \sigma(X_k : k \geq n)$.

Proof 1) $\Longrightarrow$ 2) by the characterization of $L^1(P)$ convergence.

2) $\Longrightarrow$ 1): since $M_t \geq 0$ we can use Fatou's lemma: $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s$

$$E_P\big(M_\infty \mathbf{1}_A\big) = E_P\big(\liminf_{t\to\infty} M_t \mathbf{1}_A\big)$$
$$\leq \liminf_{t\to\infty} E_P\big(M_t \mathbf{1}_A\big) = E_P\big(M_s \mathbf{1}_A\big)$$

where we used the martingale property. This is the supermartingale property at $t = \infty$:

$$M_s(\omega) \geq E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_s)(\omega) \quad P \text{ a.s.}$$

By assumption

$$E_P\Big(M_s - E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_s)\Big) = E_P(M_s) - E_P(M_\infty) = 0$$

which implies that (M_s) is an UI martingale:

$$M_s(\omega) = E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_s)(\omega) \quad P \text{ a.s.}$$

3) $\Longrightarrow$ 2): Define

$$N_t(\omega) = \frac{\sqrt{M_t(\omega)}}{a_1 a_2 \dots a_t}$$

(N_t) is a non-negative martingale in $L^2(P)$.

By Doob L^p martingale inequality with $p = 2$,

$$E_P\left(\sup_{s\le t} M_s\right) \le \text{ (by Jensen's inequality)} \quad E_P\left(\sup_{s\le t} N_s^2\right) \le 4E(N_t^2) = \frac{4}{a_1^2 \dots a_t^2}$$

and by the monotone convergence theorem

$$E_P\left(\sup_{s\in\mathbb{N}} M_s\right) = \lim_{t\to\infty} E_P\left(\sup_{s\le t} M_s\right) \le 4\prod_{t\in\mathbb{N}} a_t^{-2}$$

Now if $\prod_{t\in\mathbb{N}} a_t > 0$, this gives a finite upper bound, and necessarily (M_t) is an UI martingale since it is dominated by $\big(\sup_{s\in\mathbb{N}} M_s\big) \in L^1(P)$.

(1) $\Longrightarrow$ (3): In case $\prod_{t\in\mathbb{N}} a_t = 0$, by Fatou lemma

$$E_P\big(\sqrt{M_\infty}\big) = E_P\big(\liminf_t \sqrt{M_t}\big) \le \liminf_t E_P\big(\sqrt{M_t}\big) = \lim_t a_1 a_2 \dots a_t = 0$$

which implies $M_\infty = 0$ P a.s.

3) $\Longrightarrow$ 4): On another probability space, take a sequence $(Y_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$ of independent Bernoulli random variables with

$$P(Y_n = 1) = 1 - P(Y_n = 0) = a_n \in (0, 1]$$

Let $B_n = \{\omega : Y_n(\omega) = 1\}$, and $B = \bigcap_{n\in\mathbb{N}} B_n$.

Using σ-additivity,

$$P(B) = \prod_{n\in\mathbb{N}} P(B_n) = \prod_{n\in\mathbb{N}} a_n$$

Note that since $P(B_n) = a_n > 0\ \forall n$,

$$P(B) = 0 \Longleftrightarrow P(\liminf_n B_n) = 0 \Longleftrightarrow P(\limsup_n B_n^c) = 1$$

By the first and second Borel Cantelli lemma for independent events this is equivalent to

$$\infty = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P(B_n^c) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - a_n) \quad \square$$

Exercise 13. *Let X_n i.i.d. standard Gaussian with $E_P(X_n) = 0$ and $E_P(X_n^2) = 1$ under the measure P and let $X_n \sim \mathcal{N}(\mu_n, 1)$ and independent under the measure Q.*

In this case

$$z_n(x) = \frac{(2\pi)^{-1/2}\exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}(x-\mu_n)^2\Big)}{(2\pi)^{-1/2}\exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}x^2\Big)} = \exp\Big(x\mu_n - \frac{1}{2}\mu_n^2\Big)$$

Then $P \sim Q$ on the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_\infty$ if and only if

$$0 < \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} E_P\Big(\sqrt{\exp\Big(x\mu_n - \frac{1}{2}\mu_n^2\Big)}\Big) = \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} E_P\Big(\exp\Big(\frac{1}{2}x\mu_n - \frac{1}{4}\mu_n^2\Big)\Big)$$
$$= \prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\exp(-\frac{1}{8}\mu_n^2) = \exp\Big(-\frac{1}{8}\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\mu_n^2\Big)$$

which is equivalent to

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}\mu_n^2 < \infty$$

In fact, if $\mu_n = \mu \neq 0\ \forall\mu$, then P and Q are singular on $\mathcal{F}_\infty$.

For example by the law of large numbers the set

$$A = \big\{\omega : \lim_{n\to\infty} n^{-1}(X_1(\omega) + \cdots + X_n(\omega)) = \mu\big\}$$

has $Q(A) = 1$ and $P(A) = 0$

Exercise 14. *Suppose now that under P the random variables (X_n) are i.i.d. Poisson(1) distributed, while under Q (X_n) are independent with respective distributions Poisson(λ_n) with $\lambda_n > 0$.*

In this case

$$z_n(x) = \Big(\exp(-\lambda_n)\lambda_n^x/n!\Big)\Big/\Big(\exp(-1)/n!\Big) = \exp\big(x\log(\lambda_n) + 1 - \lambda_n\big),$$
$$E_P\big(\sqrt{z_n(X_n)}\big) = \exp\Big(\frac{1}{2}(1-\lambda_n)\Big)E_P\Big(\sqrt{\lambda_n}^{X_n}\Big) =$$
$$\exp\Big(\sqrt{\lambda_n} - 1 + \frac{1}{2}(1-\lambda_n)\Big) = \exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}(\sqrt{\lambda_n}-1)^2\Big)$$

since for a Poisson(1) distributed random variable X, $E_P\big(\theta^X\big) = \exp(\theta - 1)$.

Therefore $Q \sim P$ on $\mathcal{F}_\infty$ if and only if

$$0 < \prod_{n=1}^{\infty}\exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}(\sqrt{\lambda_n}-1)^2\Big) = \exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}\sum_{n=1}^{\infty}(\sqrt{\lambda_n}-1)^2\Big)$$
$$\iff \sum_{n=1}^{\infty}(\sqrt{\lambda_n}-1)^2 < \infty$$

Chapter 7

Continuous martingales

7.1 Continuous time

Moving from discrete to continuous time, we need some technical assumptions.

We will work with the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ on the probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$.

We say that the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t)$ satisfies the *usual conditions* if

1. The filtration is completed by the P-null sets

$$\mathcal{F}_0 \supseteq \mathcal{N}^P := \{A \subseteq \Omega : P(A) = 0\}$$

2. The filtration is right-continuous

$$\forall t \geq 0 \quad \mathcal{F}_t = \mathcal{F}_{t+} := \bigcap_{u>t} \mathcal{F}_u$$

Next we discuss why these usual assumptions are needed.

Lemma 19. *Let $\tau(\omega) \geq 0$ be a random time and $(\mathcal{F}_t : t \geq 0)$ a filtration which in general is smaller than the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_{t+} : t \geq 0)$.*

1. *$\tau(\omega)$ is a stopping time with respect to the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t+)$ if and only if $\{\tau < t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$ $\forall t \geq 0$.*
2. *When the filtration is right continuous τ is also a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping time.*

Proof When τ is a $(\mathcal{F}_t+)$-stopping time

$$\{\omega : \tau(\omega) < t\} = \bigcup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \{\omega : \tau(\omega) \leq t - n^{-1}\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$$

where, by definition of stopping time, $\{\tau(\omega) \leq t - n^{-1}\} \in \mathcal{F}_{t-1/n} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_t$.

On the other hand, from the assumption

$$\{\omega : \tau(\omega) \leq t\} = \bigcap_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \{\omega : \tau(\omega) < t + n^{-1}\} \in \mathcal{F}_{t+} \quad \square$$

Exercise 15. *We show a filtration which is not right-continuous, generated by a continuous process. Consider the probability space of continuous functions started at zero*

$$\Omega = \big\{\omega \in C(\mathbb{R}^+, \mathbb{R}) : \omega_0 = 0\big\}$$

equipped with the Borel σ-algebra, where the canonical process is $X_t(\omega) = \omega_t$, Let $(\mathcal{F}_t^0)$ be the "raw" filtraton generated by X, with $\mathcal{F}_t^0 = \sigma(\omega_s : s \le t)$.

Note that $A \in \mathcal{F}_t^0$ if and only if for all $\omega, \widehat{\omega} \in \Omega$, with $\omega_s = \widehat{\omega}_s \quad \forall s \in [0,t]$,

$$\omega \in A \Longleftrightarrow \widehat{\omega} \in A$$

meaning that A depends only on the path ω restricted to the interval $[0,t]$.

For $a > 0$, consider first the random time

$$\tau(\omega) = \inf\big\{t > 0 : \omega_t \ge a\big\}$$

Now $\forall t > 0$,

$$\{\omega : \tau(\omega) \le t\} = \{\omega : \inf_{q \le t, q \in \mathbb{Q}^+} (a - \omega_q)^+ = 0\}$$

now since $(a - \omega_q)^+$ is $\mathcal{F}_q^0$ measurable by taking the infimum over the countable set $[0,t] \cap \mathbb{Q}$, we see that this event is $\mathcal{F}_t^0$ measurable.

Next we construct a random time which is a $(\mathcal{F}_{t+}^0)$-stopping time but not a $(\mathcal{F}_t^0)$-stopping time. This shows that the raw filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t^0)$ is not right continuous, even if it is generated by a continuous process. Let

$$\widetilde{\tau}(\omega) = \inf\big\{t > 0 : \omega_t > a\big\}$$

For each $t > 0$,

$$\{\omega : \widetilde{\tau}(\omega) < t\} = \bigcup_{q \in \mathbb{Q}^+, q < t} \{\omega : \omega_q > a\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$$

meaning that $\widetilde{\tau}$ is a $(\mathcal{F}_{t+}^0)$ stopping time.

However $\widetilde{\tau}$ is not a $(\mathcal{F}_t^0)$-stopping time. For fixed t, consider a set of paths which are crossing the level a for the first time at time t:

$$A_t = \{\omega : \widetilde{\tau}(\omega) = t\}$$
$$= \big\{\omega : \omega_q < a; \forall q < t, \ \omega_t = a, \ \exists N : \omega_{t+1/n} > a \quad \forall n > N\big\}$$

For $\omega \in A_t$, consider the reflected path $\widehat{\omega}$

$$\widehat{\omega}_s = \begin{cases} \omega_s & s \in [0,t] \\ 2a - \omega_s & s > t \end{cases}$$

Now by construction when $\omega \in A_t$, $\tau(\widehat{\omega}) > \tau(\omega) = t$, since by construction $\widehat{\omega}$ attains the local maxima a at time t, and may cross the level a only later.

Which means, the event $\{\widetilde{\tau} \le t\}$ is $\mathcal{F}_{t+}^0$ measurable but not $\mathcal{F}_t^0$ measurable: the path ω and $\widehat{\omega}$ coincide up to time $\widetilde{t}$au, but $\omega \in A_t$ and $\widehat{\omega} \notin A_t$, which means that $A_t \notin \mathcal{F}_t^0$.

By observing the paths on the interval $[0,t]$ we cannot distinguish between $\omega \in A_t$ and the corresponding $\widehat{\omega}$. For that we need to observe a little bit of the *future, that is the extra information contained in* $\mathcal{F}^0_{t+}$

Things may change when we complete the filtration with respect to a probability measure: Let P^W *the Brownian measure on* Ω*, such that the canonical process* $X_t(\omega) = \omega_t$ *is a Brownian motion, and let* $(\mathcal{F}_t)$ *the filtration completed by the* P^W*-null events.*

In the previous example it is not difficult to show that for each fixed $t > 0$ $P^W(A_t) = 0$*, meaning that the probability that the Brownian motion will cross the level* a *for the first time at the pre-specified time* t *is zero, and by reflection this is equal to the probability that the Brownian motion attains a local maximum* a *at time* t*. Therefore*

$$\{\widetilde{\tau} \le t\} = \{\widetilde{\tau} < t\} \cup \{\widetilde{\tau} = t\} \in \sigma(\mathcal{F}^0_t, \mathcal{N}^P) = \mathcal{F}_t$$

$\widetilde{\tau}$ *is a stopping time with respect to the* P^W*-completed filtration* $(\mathcal{F}_t)$*.*

We have seen that continuous process can generate filtrations which are not right continuous. On the other hand, the raw filtration generated by a process with jumps may become right-continuous after completing with the P-null sets.

Proposition 21. *The completed filtration generated by a time-homogeneous process with independent increments is continuous.*

Proof We give for the case of Brownian motion, but you can check that it goes through also for the Poisson process, (the same proof works for Lévy processes which we have not introduced yet).

Let $\mathbb{F}^0 = (\mathcal{F}^0_t)$ the raw Brownian filtration, with

$$\mathcal{F}^0_t = \sigma(B_s : 0 \le s \le t)$$

For $0 \le s_0 < s_1 < \cdots < s_n$ and $\theta_1, \dots, \theta_n \in \mathbb{R}$, we consider the Gaussian random vector

$$G(\omega) = \big(B_{s_i}(\omega) - B_{s_{i-1}}(\omega) : \ i = 1, \dots, n\big)$$

For each $\theta \in \mathbb{R}^n$, the characteristic function the conditional distribution of G given $\mathcal{F}^0_t$ is a martingale

$$Z_t(\theta) = E_P\left(\exp\left\{ \sqrt{-1} \sum_{i=1}^n \theta_i (B_{s_i} - B_{s_{i-1}}) \right\} \middle| \mathcal{F}^0_t \right)$$

$$\stackrel{P \text{ a.s.}}{=} \exp\left\{ \sqrt{-1} \sum_{i=1}^n \theta_i (B_{s_i \wedge t} - B_{s_{i-1} \wedge t}) \right\} E_P\left(\exp\left\{ \sqrt{-1} \sum_{i=1}^n \theta_i (B_{s_i \wedge t} - B_{s_{i-1} \wedge t}) \right\} \right)$$

$$= \exp\left\{ \sqrt{-1} \sum_{i=1}^n \theta_i (B_{s_i \wedge t} - B_{s_{i-1} \wedge t}) - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^n \theta_i^2 (s_i \wedge t - s_{i-1} \wedge t) \right\}$$

We see directly (without using Doob's martingale convergence theorem which up to now we know only in discrete time), that $t \mapsto Z_t(\omega)$ is continuous when $t \mapsto B_t(\omega)$ is continuous. Since the conditional characteristic function characterizes the conditional distribution, for every bounded measurable test function $f : \mathbb{R}^n \to \mathbb{R}$

$$E_P(f(G)|\mathcal{F}^0_{t\pm})(\omega) \stackrel{P \text{ a.s.}}{=} \lim_{n \to \infty} E_P(f(G)|\mathcal{F}^0_{t \pm n^{-1}})(\omega) = E_P(f(G)|\mathcal{F}^0_t)(\omega)$$

where the identity holds P-almost surely. Since $\mathcal{F}^0_\infty = \sigma(G_s : s \ge 0)$ it follows that $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}^0_\infty$

$$P(A|\mathcal{F}^0_{t\pm})(\omega) = P(A|\mathcal{F}^0_t)(\omega) \quad P \text{ almost surely}$$

But this implies $\mathcal{F}^0_{t+} \vee \mathcal{N}^P = \mathcal{F}^0_t \vee \mathcal{N}^P = \mathcal{F}^0_{t-} \vee \mathcal{N}^P$, since for $A \in \mathcal{F}^0_+ \setminus \mathcal{F}^0_-$,

$$X(\omega) := \mathbf{1}_A(\omega) - P(A|\mathcal{F}^0_{t-})(\omega) = 0 \quad P \text{ almost surely}$$

is $\mathcal{N}^P$ measurable, therefore A is $\mathcal{F}^0_{t-} \vee \mathcal{N}^P$ measurable $\square$

We need to extend the results for discrete time martingales to continuous time.

Lemma 20. *Let $\tau(\omega) \in \mathbb{R}^+ \cup \{+\infty\}$ a stopping time with respect to the filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$.*

There is a sequence of stopping times $(\tau_n(\omega) : n \in \mathbb{N})$ where each τ_n takes finitely many values and $\tau_n(\omega) \ge \tau(\omega)$, approximating τ from above:

$$\tau_n(\omega) \downarrow \tau(\omega) \qquad \forall \omega \text{ as } n \uparrow \infty \,.$$

Proof: Define

$$\tau_n(\omega) = \begin{cases} +\infty & \text{if } \tau(\omega) \ge n \\ (k+1)/n & \text{otherwise, for } \tau(\omega) \in \big[k/n, (k+1)/n\big), \quad k \in \mathbb{N} \end{cases}$$

You see that τ_n is a $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time:

$$\{\omega : \tau_n(\omega) \le t\} = \{\omega : \tau(\omega) \le \lfloor tn \rfloor / n\} \in \mathcal{F}_{\lfloor tn \rfloor / n} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_t \quad \forall t \ge 0$$

where $\lfloor x \rfloor$ is the largest integer smaller than x.

Remark 12. *Note that corresponding random time approximating the $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time τ from below*

$$\widehat{\tau}_n(\omega) = \begin{cases} n & \text{if } \tau(\omega) \ge n \\ k/n & \text{otherwise, for } \tau(\omega) \in \big[k/n, (k+1)/n\big), \quad k \in \mathbb{N} \end{cases}$$

is not always a stopping time.

Definition 33. *A random time $\sigma(\omega) \in (\mathbb{R}^+ \cup \{+\infty\})$ is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable is there is an announcing sequence of $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times (τ_n) approximating σ from below*

$$\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \sigma(\omega), \quad \forall \omega$$

and

$$\tau_n(\omega) < \tau(\omega) \quad \text{on the set } \{\omega : \tau(\omega) > 0\}$$

Lemma 21. *A $\mathbb{F}$-predictable time is a $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time.*

Proof: $\forall t, \quad \big\{\omega : \sigma(\omega) \le t\big\} = \bigcap_{n \in \mathbb{N}} \big\{\omega : \tau_n(\omega) \le t\big\} \in \mathcal{F}_t.$

Lemma 22. *(Regularization) Let $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{Q}+)$ is a $\mathbb{F}$-submartingale, with $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \in \mathbb{Q}^+)$. We can replace $\mathbb{Q}^+$ by any countable set dense in $\mathbb{R}^+$.*

Then P almost surely the left and right limits

$$X_{t-}(\omega) := \lim_{q \uparrow t, q \in \mathbb{Q}^+} X_q(\omega), \quad X_{t+}(\omega) := \lim_{q \downarrow t, q \in \mathbb{Q}^+} X_q(\omega)$$

exist simultaneously for all $t \in \mathbb{R}^+$.

Proof: It is enough to prove the lemma in a finite interval $[0,T]\cap\mathbb{Q}^+$, with $T\in Q$.

Let F_n a non-decreasing sequence of finite sets with $F_n\subseteq F_{n+1}$ and

$$\bigcup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} F_n = ([0,T]\cap\mathbb{Q}^+)$$

For each finite set F_n, $(X_q : q\in F_n)$ is a submartingale in the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_q : q\in F_n)$.

Define for $a<b\in\mathbb{R}$ the number of downcrossings of $[a,b]$ by $X(\omega)$

$$D_{[a,b]}\big(X_q(\omega) : q\in\mathbb{Q}\cap[0,T]\big) := \sup_F D_{[a,b]}\big(X_q(\omega) : q\in F\big)$$

where the supremum is over finite subsets $F\subseteq[0,T]\cap\mathbb{Q}^+$.

Note that for each finite F, $F\subseteq F_n$ for n large enough, therefore

$$D_{[a,b]}\big(X_q(\omega) : q\in F_n\big)\uparrow D_{[a,b]}\big(X_q(\omega) : q\in\mathbb{Q}\cap[0,T]\big)\qquad\text{as } n\uparrow\infty,\ \forall\omega$$

By Doob submartingale inequality in discrete time , $\forall n$

$$E(D_{[a,b]}\big(X_q(\omega) : q\in F_n\big)\le\frac{E(X_T^+)+b^-}{b-a}\le\frac{E(|X_T|)+b^-}{b-a}<\infty$$

Therefore by monotone convergence,

$$E\Big(D_{[a,b]}\big(X_q(\omega) : q\in\mathbb{Q}\cap[0,T]\big)\Big)<\infty\quad\Longrightarrow$$
$$D_{[a,b]}\big(X_q(\omega) : q\in\mathbb{Q}\cap[0,T]\big)<\infty\quad\forall a<b\in\mathbb{Q},\qquad P\text{ a.s.}$$

which means that P a.s. left and right limits exist simultaneously for all $t\in[0,T]$, and since $\mathbb{R}^+$ is covered by countably many finite intervals it holds also P a.s. simultaneously for all $t\in\mathbb{R}^+$. By following the proof of Doob martingale convergence theorem we see also that $\forall t\in[0,T]$, as $q\to\mathbb{Q}$ from the left or from the right we have by Fatou lemma

$$E_P(|\lim_{q\uparrow t}X_q|)\le\liminf_{q\uparrow t}E_P(|X_q|)\le E(|X_0|)+2E(|X_T|)<\infty,$$
$$E_P(|\lim_{q\uparrow t}X_q|)\le\liminf_{q\uparrow t}E_P(|X_q|)\le E(|X_0|)+2E(|X_T|)<\infty,$$

by using the submartingale property for $0\le q\le T<\infty$, since $x^+\le y^+$ when $x\le y$,

$$|X_q| = -X_q+2X_q^+,\quad\Longrightarrow E_P(|X_q|)\le -E_P(X_0)+2E_P\big(E_P(X_T|\mathcal{F}_q)^+\big)$$
$$\le -E_P(X_0)+2E_P\big(E_P(X_T^+|\mathcal{F}_q)\big)\le E_P(|X_0|)+2E_P(|X_T|)<\infty$$

which implies that these left and right limits are finite P a.s $\square$

Remark 13. *By changing the sign a supermartingale becomes a submartingale, and lemma 22 holds as well for supermartingales. Although the submartingale (X_q) was defined only on $\mathbb{Q}^+$, we can use the existence of the limit to redefine outside a P-null set a modification of the process which is right continuous at all $t\in\mathbb{R}^+$. In order to have adaptedness for the redefined process we need to work with the right continuous filtration completed by the P-null sets.*

Lemma 23. *Let $D^+ = \{k2^{-n} : k, n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ be the dyadic set (or another countable set dense in $\mathbb{R}^+$), and let $(M_u)_{u\in D^+}$ be a right-continuous martingale in the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_u)_{u\in D^+}$ satisfying the usual conditions. For $t \in \mathbb{R}^+$ define*

$$M_t(\omega) := \lim_{u\downarrow t, u\in D^+} M_u(\omega), \quad \mathcal{F}_t = \bigcap_{u>t, u\in D^+} \mathcal{F}_u$$

Then $(M_t)_{t\in\mathbb{R}^+}$ is a right-continuous martingale in the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t\in\mathbb{R}^+}$ which satisfies the usual conditions.

Proof By definition, $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t\in\mathbb{R}^+}$ is right continuous.

Let $u_n \in D^+$ with $u_n \downarrow t$, and consider the time-discrete filtration with negative times $\widehat{\mathcal{F}}_{-n} = \mathcal{F}_{u_n}$. By definition

$$\mathcal{F}_t = \widehat{\mathcal{F}}_{-\infty} = \bigcap_n \mathcal{F}_{u_n}$$

The process $(M_{u_n} : n \in \mathbb{N})$ is a $(\widehat{\mathcal{F}}_{-n})$-martingale, and by Doob's backward convergence theorem (10) and since (M_{u_n}) is right-continuous on the dyadics, define

$$\begin{aligned} M_t(\omega) :=& \limsup_{n\to\infty} M_{u_n}(\omega) \quad \forall\omega, \\ =& \lim_{n\to\infty} M_{u_n}(\omega) \quad P\text{-almost surely,} \end{aligned}$$

where by definition M_t is $\mathcal{F}_t$-measurable and in the second equality the limit is P-almost surely and in $L^1(P)$, which implies $M_t \in L^1(P)$.

Let's check the martingale property: for $s, t \in \mathbb{R}$ with $s \le t$, and let $r_n \in D^+$ with $r_n \downarrow s$ and $u_n \in D^+$ with $u_n \downarrow t$. Since $s \le t$ we can choose sequences such that $r_n \le u_n$. Let $A \in \mathcal{F}_s \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{r_n}$, $\forall n$.

Since $M_{u_n}(\omega) \to M_t(\omega)$ and $M_{r_n}(\omega) \to M_s(\omega)$ P-almost surely and in $L^1(P)$

$$E_P\big(M_t \mathbf{1}_A\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E_P(M_{u_n}\mathbf{1}_A) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E_P(M_{r_n}\mathbf{1}_A) = E_P\big(M_s\mathbf{1}_A\big)$$

where we used the martingale property of $(M_u)_{u\in D^+}$ □

Note that in the backward martingale convergence theorem we get uniform integrability and $L^1(P)$-convergence for free.

Proposition 22. *Doob' optional stopping theorem in continuous time.*

Let $(M_t : t \in [0, +\infty])$ a right-continuous uniformly integrable $\mathbb{F}$-martingale where $\mathbb{F}$ is right continuous, and $0 \le \sigma(\omega) \le \tau(\omega)$ $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times.

Then

$$E(M_\tau|\mathcal{F}_\sigma) = M_\sigma(\omega)$$

Proof: There are two non-increasing sequences of stopping times σ_n, τ_n with

$$\sigma(\omega) \le \sigma_n(\omega) \le \tau_n(\omega), \quad \tau(\omega) \le \tau_n(\omega)$$

which for each fixed n take values in the dyadics $D_n = (k2^{-n} : k \in \mathbb{N})$ and

$$\sigma_n(\omega) \downarrow \sigma(\omega), \quad \sigma_n(\omega) \downarrow \tau_n(\omega) \quad \text{as } n \uparrow \infty$$

To do this simply take

$$\tau_n(\omega) := (k+1)2^{-n} \text{ otherwise, for } \tau(\omega) \in \big[k2^{-n}, (k+1)2^{-n}\big), \quad k \in \mathbb{N}$$
$$\sigma_n(\omega) = (k+1)2^{-n} \text{ otherwise, for } \sigma(\omega) \in \big[k2^{-n}, (k+1)2^{-n}\big), \quad k \in \mathbb{N}$$

and $\tau_n(\omega) = +\infty$ and $\sigma_n(\omega) = +\infty$ when $\tau(\omega) = +\infty$ and $\sigma(\omega) = +\infty$, respectively, and check that they are stopping times.

The fitrations $(\mathcal{F}_{\tau_n} : n \in N)$, $(\mathcal{F}_{\sigma_n} : n \in N)$, are non-increasing as $n \to \infty$.

Therefore we apply Doob's backward convergence theorem,

$$M_{\tau_n}(\omega) \to M_\tau(\omega) \quad \text{and} \quad M_{\sigma_n}(\omega) \to M_\sigma(\omega)$$

not just P-almost surely (which is implied by the right continuity) but also in $L^1(P)$

For every fixed n, by the discrete time version of the optional sampling theorem with the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_d : d \in D_n)$ under the uniform integrability assumption

$$E_P(M_{\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_{\sigma_n})(\omega) = M_{\sigma_n}(\omega)$$

Let $A \in \mathcal{F}_\sigma \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{\sigma_n} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_\tau \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{\tau_n}$.

$$E\big(M_\tau \mathbf{1}_A\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E\big(M_{\tau_n}\mathbf{1}_A\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E\big(M_{\sigma_n}\mathbf{1}_A\big) = E\big(M_\sigma \mathbf{1}_A\big)$$

where we used the convergence in $L^1(P)$ to take the limit in and out of the expectation.

Lemma 24. *If τ and σ are $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times, $(\tau \wedge \sigma)$ is an $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time and*

$$\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge\sigma} = \mathcal{F}_\tau \cap \mathcal{F}_\sigma$$

Proof: $\{\tau \wedge \sigma \le t\} = \{\tau \le t\} \cup \{\sigma \le t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$.

Clearly $\mathcal{F}_\sigma \cap \mathcal{F}_\tau \supseteq \mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge\sigma}$, since $\sigma \ge \tau \wedge \sigma$ and $\tau \ge \wedge\sigma$, and recall that intersection of σ-algebrae is a σ-algebra. For the opposite inclusion, if $A \in \mathcal{F}_\sigma \cap \mathcal{F}_\tau$, then $A \cap \{\sigma \le t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$ and $A \cap \{\tau \le t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$, which implies

$$(A \cap \{\sigma \le t\}) \cup (A \cap \{\tau \le t\}) = A \cap \{\tau \wedge \sigma\} \in \mathcal{F}_t$$

which means $A \in \mathcal{F}_{\sigma\wedge\tau}$ $\square$

Lemma 25. *Let τ be an F-stopping time and X_t an $\mathbb{F}$-adapted right continuous process. When the filtration $\mathbb{F}$ is right continuous, $X_\tau(\omega)$ is $\mathcal{F}_\tau$ measurable.*

Proof: approximate the stopping time τ from above by a sequence of $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times $\tau_n(\omega) \downarrow \tau(\omega)$ with $\tau_n(\omega)$ taking values in the dyadics $D^n = (2^{-n}k : k \in \mathbb{N})$.

Now for each $n \in N$ consider the discrete time filtration with $\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}^n_k = \mathcal{F}_{k2^{-n}}$, $k \in \mathbb{N}$, It follows that $X_{\tau_n}(\omega)$ is $\mathcal{F}_{\tau_n}$ by the result in discrete time.

Since $\mathcal{F}_\tau = \bigcup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} \mathcal{F}_{\tau_n}$, since $\mathbb{F}$ is right continuous, and $X_\tau = \limsup_{n\to\infty} X_{\tau_n}(\omega)$ since X is right continuous, it follows that X_τ is $\mathcal{F}_\tau$-measurable.

Proposition 23. *Let (M_t) a right continuous martingale in the right continuous filtration $\mathbb{F}$, and $\tau(\omega)$ a $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time. Then the stopped process*

$$M_t^\tau(\omega) = M_{t\wedge\tau}(\omega) := M_t(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) > t) + M_\tau(\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) \leq t)$$

is a $\mathbb{F}$-martingale.

Proof Note that $\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau} = \mathcal{F}_t \cap \mathcal{F}_\tau$.

We show that $M_{t\wedge\tau}$ is $\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau}$-measurable:

Since τ is a stopping time it follows that $(M_{t\wedge\tau})$ is $\mathbb{F}$-adapted. Let's fix $0 \leq s \leq t < \infty$. Now in a finite interval $(M_s : s \leq t)$ is uniformly integrable, and by Doob's optional stopping theorem applied to the bounded stopping times $(s\wedge\tau) \leq (t\wedge\tau) \leq t$,

$$E(M_{t\wedge\tau}|\mathcal{F}_{s\wedge\tau})(\omega) = M_{s\wedge\tau}$$

Next we show that

$$E(M_{\tau\wedge t}|\mathcal{F}_s) = M_\tau\mathbf{1}(\tau \leq s) + E(M_{\tau\wedge t}|\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge s})\mathbf{1}(\tau > s)$$

For $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$,

$$E(M_{\tau\wedge t}\mathbf{1}_A) = E(M_\tau\mathbf{1}_A\mathbf{1}(\tau \leq s)) + E(M_{\tau\wedge t}\mathbf{1}_A\mathbf{1}(\tau > s))$$

Note that $A \cap \{\tau > s\}$ is not only $\mathcal{F}_s$ measurable but also $\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge s}$ measurable since by definition for all $r \geq 0$

$$A \cap \{\tau > s\} \cap \{\tau \wedge s \leq r\} = \begin{cases} \emptyset \in \mathcal{F}_s & \text{if } s > r \\ A \cap \{\tau > s\} \in \mathcal{F}_s & \text{if } s \leq r \end{cases}$$

Therefore by taking conditional expectation w.r.t. $\mathcal{F}_{\tau\wedge s}$ inside the expectation we get

$$\begin{aligned} E(M_{\tau\wedge t}\mathbf{1}_A) &= E\Big(\big(M_\tau\mathbf{1}(\tau \leq s) + E(M_{\tau\wedge t}|\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge s})\mathbf{1}(\tau > s)\big)\mathbf{1}_A\Big) \\ &= E\Big(\big(M_\tau\mathbf{1}(\tau \leq s) + M_{\tau\wedge s}\mathbf{1}(\tau > s)\big)\mathbf{1}_A\Big) = E\big(M_{\tau\wedge s}\mathbf{1}_A\big) \end{aligned}$$

which means

$$E(M_{t\wedge\tau}|\mathcal{F}_s)(\omega) = M_{s\wedge\tau}(\omega)$$

7.2 Localization

Definition 34. *We say that a property holds locally with respect to the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t)$ for the process $(X_t(\omega))$, if there is a localizing sequence of $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping times $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ such that for each n the stopped process $X_t^{\tau_n}(\omega) := X_{t\wedge\tau_n}(\omega)$ satisfyies that property.*

For example every $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted process $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ with continuous paths and $X_0(\omega) = 0$, is locally bounded, the sequence of $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times

$$\tau_n(\omega) := \inf\{t : |X_t(\omega)| > n\},$$

is localizing: $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ since $|X_t(\omega)| < \infty$, and $|X_{t\wedge\tau_n}(\omega)| \leq n$.

7.3 Doob decomposition in continuous time

We recall that the (total) variation of a function $s \mapsto x(s)$ in the interval $[0,t]$ is given by

$$V_{[0,t]}(x) := \sup_{\Pi} \sum_{t_i \in \Pi} |x(t_i) - x(t_{i-1})|$$

where the supremum is taken over partitions $\Pi = (0 = t_0 \le t_1 \le \dots, \le t_n = t)$ of the interval $[0,t]$. It follows that $x(s)$ has finite first variation if and only if $x(s) = x(0) + x^{\oplus}(s) - x^{\ominus}(s)$ with $x^{\oplus}, x^{\ominus}$ non-decreasing functions.

Lemma 26. *A continuous local martingale* $(M_t : t \in [0,T])$ *with almost surely finite (total) variation is necessarily constant.*

Proof Without loss of generality we assume that $M_0(\omega) = 0$. Let $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ a localizing sequence of stopping times such that for each n the stopped process $M_{t\wedge\tau_n}$ is a martingale. We define stopping times

$$\sigma_n = \tau_n \wedge \inf\{t : V_{[0,t]}(X(\omega)) > n\} \le \tau_n$$

By Doob optional sampling theorem, the stopped process $M_t^{\sigma_n}(\omega)$ is a martingale with

$$|M_t^{\sigma_n}| \le V_{[0,t]}(M^{\sigma_n}) \le n \quad \forall t \ge 0$$

Since $\sigma_n(\omega) \to \infty$, it is a localizing sequence. In order to simplify the notation, let's fix n and assume that $M_t(\omega) := M_t^{\sigma_n}(\omega)$ is a true martingale, which has bounded first variation. By the discrete integration by parts formula, for a sequence $(0 = t_0 \le t_1 \le t_2 \le \dots)$, with $t_n \to \infty$. We have

$$M_t^2 = 2\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} M_{t_{i-1}}(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}) + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty}(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t})^2$$

Since $s \mapsto M_s(\omega)$ is uniformly continuous on $[0,t]$, there is a random $\delta(\omega)$ such that

$$\sum_i (M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t})^2 \le \sup_i |M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}| \sum_i |M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}| \le \varepsilon V_{[0,t]}(M) \le \varepsilon n$$

when $\Delta(\Pi) = \sup_i \big\{ (t_i \wedge t) - (t_{i-1} \wedge t) \big\} < \delta(\omega)$. This means

$$\sum_i (M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t})^2 \to 0 \qquad P\text{-almost surely}$$

as $\Delta(\Pi) \to 0$, and we have

$$M_t^2 = \lim_{\Delta(\Pi)\to 0} 2\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}) := 2\int_0^t M_s dM_s \qquad P\text{-almost surely}$$

where for almost every ω the limit of Riemann-sums with continuous integrand and integrator of finite variation is a Riemann-Stieltjes integral. By taking expectation,

$$E_P(M_t^2) = 2E_P\left(\lim_{\Delta(\Pi)\to 0}\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} M_{t_{i-1}}(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t})\right)$$
$$= 2\lim_{\Delta(\Pi)\to 0} E_P\left(\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} M_{t_{i-1}}(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t})\right) =$$
$$\lim_{\Delta(\Pi)\to 0} 2\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} E_P\left(M_{t_{i-1}} E_P(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}|\mathcal{F}_{t_{i-1}\wedge t})\right) = 0$$

where we used the martingale property, which gives $M_t(\omega) = M_0(\omega) = 0\ \forall t$. The interchange of limit and expectation is justified by the bounded convergence theorem, since $M_t(\omega)$ has bounded variation.

$$\left|\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} M_{t_{i-1}}(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t})\right| \le V_{[0,t]}(M(\omega))^2 \le n^2 \quad P\text{-almost surely .}$$

Coming back to the local martingale, $E\big(M^2_{t\wedge\sigma_n}\big) = 0$ implies $M_{t\wedge\sigma_n} = 0$ P a.s,

$$M_t(\omega) = \lim_{n\to\infty} M_{t\wedge\sigma_n}(\omega) = 0 \quad P\text{-almost surely } \square$$

The next two technical lemma are not very intuitive but useful:

Lemma 27. *Suppose $(A_n : n \in \mathbb{N})$ is a $(\mathcal{F}_n)$-predictable and non-decreasing process with $A_0 = 0$, such that*

$$Z_n := E_P(A_\infty - A_n|\mathcal{F}_n)(\omega) \le C \quad \forall n$$

Then $E_P(A_\infty^2) \le 2C^2$.

Proof Note that Z_n is a potential (see 27).

$$(A_n)^2 = \sum_{k=1}^{n}\sum_{h=1}^{n} \Delta A_k \Delta A_k = 2\sum_{k=1}^{n}\sum_{h=k}^{n} \Delta A_h \Delta A_k - \sum_{k=1}^{n}(\Delta A_k)^2$$
$$= 2\sum_{k=1}^{n}(A_n - A_{k-1})\Delta A_k - \sum_{k=1}^{n}(\Delta A_k)^2$$

where $\Delta A_k = (A_k - A_{k-1})$, and since the terms $(A_n)^2$ and $\sum_{k=1}^{n}(\Delta A_k)^2$ are non-negative and non-decreasing, the monotone convergence theorem applies

$$E_P(A_\infty^2) = 2E\left(\sum_{k=0}^{\infty}(A_\infty - A_{k-1})\Delta A_k\right) - E_P\left(\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}(\Delta A_k)^2\right)$$

where we can exchange the order of summation and integration. By taking conditional expectation inside and using predictability,

$$E_P(A_\infty^2) \le 2\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} E_P\left(E_P\big((A_\infty - A_{k-1})\Delta A_k\big|\mathcal{F}_{k-1}\big)\right)$$
$$= 2\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} E_P\left(E(A_\infty - A_{k-1}|\mathcal{F}_{k-1})\Delta A_k\right) \le 2CE_P\left(\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}\Delta A_k\right) = 2CE_P(A_\infty) \le 2C^2$$

Lemma 28. *Suppose $A_n^{(1)}$ and $A_n^{(2)}$ are two predictable processes satisfying the hypothesis of lemma 27 and $B_n = (A_n^{(1)} - A_n^{(2)})$. Suppose that there is a r.v. $Y(\omega) \geq 0$ with $E_P(Y^2) < \infty$ and*

$$\big|E_P(B_\infty - B_n|\mathcal{F}_n)(\omega)\big| \leq N_n(\omega) := E_P(Y|\mathcal{F}_n)(\omega) \quad \forall n \; .$$

Then there exists a constant $c > 0$ such that

$$E_P\bigg(\sup_{n\in N} B_n^2\bigg) \leq c\bigg(E_P(Y^2) + CE(Y^2)^{1/2}\bigg)$$

Proof We shall need the following estimate: since

$$|\Delta B_k| = |\Delta A_k^{(1)} - \Delta A_k^{(2)}| \leq \Delta A_k^{(1)} + \Delta A_k^{(2)},$$

it follows

$$E_P(B_\infty^2) = 2E\bigg(\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} E(B_\infty - B_{k-1}|\mathcal{F}_k)\Delta B_k\bigg) - E_P\bigg(\sum_{k=1}^{\infty}(\Delta B_k)^2\bigg) \leq 2E_P\big((A_\infty^{(1)} + A_\infty^{(2)})Y\big)$$
$$\leq 2E_P\big(Y^2\big)^{1/2}\bigg(E_P\big(\{A_\infty^{(1)}\}^2\big)^{1/2} + E_P\big(\{A_\infty^{(2)}\}^2\big)^{1/2}\bigg) \leq 2^{5/2}CE_P(Y^2)^{1/2}$$

where we used Cauchy-Schwartz inequality together with lemma 27.

Let $M_n := E_P(B_\infty|\mathcal{F}_n)$, $X_n := (M_n - B_n)$, satisfying

$$|X_n| = \big|E_P(B_\infty - B_n|\mathcal{F}_n)\big| \leq E(Y|\mathcal{F}_n) = N_n := E_P(Y|\mathcal{F}_n)$$

By Doob's L^p martingale maximal inequality

$$E\bigg(\sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} X_n^2\bigg) \leq E_P\bigg(\sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} N_n^2\bigg) \leq 4E_P(N_\infty^2) \leq 4E_P(Y^2)$$

and

$$E\bigg(\sup_{n\in\mathbb{N}} M_n^2\bigg) \leq 4E\bigg(M_\infty^2\bigg) = 4E(B_\infty^2)$$

Since $\sup_n |B_n| \leq \sup_n |X_n| + \sup_n |M_n|$, by the inequality $(a+b)^2 \leq 2(a^2+b^2)$

$$E(\sup_n B_n^2) \leq 2\bigg\{E(\sup_n X_n^2) + E(\sup_n M_n^2)\bigg\} \leq 8\bigg(E(Y^2) + E(B_\infty^2)\bigg)$$
$$\leq 8\bigg(E(Y^2) + 2^{5/2}CE_P(Y^2)^{1/2}\bigg) \quad \square$$

Theorem 22. *Suppose $(X_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ is a $(P, \mathbb{F})$-submartingale with continuous paths. Then we have the Doob-Meyer decomposition*

$$X_t(\omega) = X_0(\omega) + M_t(\omega) + A_t(\omega)$$

*where $M_0(\omega) = A_0(\omega) = 0$, M_t is a continuous $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-**local** martingale and A_t is $\mathbb{F}$-adapted continuous and non-decreasing. Moreover (M_t) and (A_t) are uniquely determined up to indistinguishable processes.*

Remark : The result holds also for continuous local submartingales (the localizing sequence is obtained by taking minimum of localizing sequences). It also extends to processes with jumps.

Proof, Uniqueness: From the Bass, *Probabilistic techniques in analysis* .

Suppose that we have two Doob-Meyer decompositions

$$X_t - X_0 = M_t + A_t = \widetilde{M}_t + \widetilde{A}_t$$

It follows that

$$(M_t - \widetilde{M}_t) = (\widetilde{A}_t - A_t)$$

is a continuous local martingale starting from 0 with paths of finite variation, and by lemma 26 it is constant P-almost surely.

Existence : by considering the stopped process $X_t^{\tau_C} = X_{t\wedge\tau_C}$, where

$$\tau_C(\omega) = \inf\{s : |X_s(\omega)| > C \text{ or } s > C\}$$

we reduce first the problem to the case where X is a bounded and uniformly continuous process, which is constant on the interval $[C, \infty)$. Without loss of generality we assume that $X_0(\omega) = 0$.

Fix k and $m \in \mathbb{N}$, and consider $\mathcal{F}_k^m = \mathcal{F}_{k2^{-m}}$, $k \in \mathbb{N}$.

Construct for each $m \in \mathbb{N}$ the discrete time Doob's submartingale decomposition

$$X_{k2^{-m}}(\omega) = M_k^{(m)} + A_k^{(m)}$$

In continuous time we define for each m piecewise constant filtrations

$$\overline{\mathcal{F}}_t^{(m)}(\omega) = \mathcal{F}_{k2^{-m}}(\omega) \quad \text{when } (k-1)2^{-m} < t \le k2^{-m}$$

and the time process

$$\overline{A}_t^{(m)}(\omega) = A_k^{(m)}(\omega) \quad \text{when } (k-1)2^{-m} < t \le k2^{-m} .$$

Both the filtration and the process are left-continuous. Note that for each m, $\overline{A}_t^{(m)}$ is $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted, since in the time-discrete Doob decomposition $A_k^{(m)}(\omega)$ is $\mathcal{F}_{(k-1)2^{-m}}$-measurable.

Consider the *modulus of continuity*

$$W(\delta, \omega) := \sup_{s \le K, |s-t| \le \delta} |X_t(\omega) - X_s(\omega)|$$

$W(\delta)$ is a bounded random variable since $X_t(\omega)$ is bounded, and because $X_t(\omega)$ has uniformly continuous paths on the compact interval $[0, C]$, $W(\delta) \to 0$ P-almost surely as $\delta \to 0$. By the bounded convergence theorem $W(\delta) \to 0$ also in $L^2(P)$ sense.

We show that $\overline{A}_t^{(m)}$ converges in $L^2(P)$ uniformly in t as $m \to \infty$.

For $m > n$, $\overline{A}_t^{(m)}$ and $\overline{A}_t^{(n)}$ are constant on the intervals $\big((k-1)2^{-m}, k2^{-m}\big]$, we have

$$\sup_t \big|\overline{A}_t^{(m)} - \overline{A}_t^{(n)}\big| = \sup_{k\in\mathbb{N}} \big|\overline{A}_{k2^{-m}}^{(m)} - \overline{A}_{k2^{-m}}^{(n)}\big|$$

Fix $t = k2^{-m}$ for some k. and let $(l-1)2^{-n} < t \le l2^{-n}$. Denote $u = l2^{-n}$. By the discrete time Doob decomposition

$$E_P(\overline{A}_\infty^{(m)} - \overline{A}_t^{(m)} | \overline{\mathcal{F}}_t^{(m)})(\omega) = E_P(A_\infty^{(m)} - A_k^{(m)} | \mathcal{F}_{k2^{-m}})(\omega) = E_P(X_\infty - X_t | \mathcal{F}_{k2^{-m}})(\omega) = E_P(X_\infty - X_t | \mathcal{F}_t)(\omega)$$

On the other hand

$$E_P(\overline{A}_\infty^{(n)} - \overline{A}_t^{(n)} | \overline{\mathcal{F}}_t^{(m)})(\omega) = E_P(A_\infty^{(n)} - A_l^{(n)} | \mathcal{F}_t)(\omega) = E_P\left(E_P(A_\infty^{(n)} - A_l^{(n)} | \mathcal{F}_u) \middle| \mathcal{F}_t \right)(\omega) = E_P\left(E_P(X_\infty - X_u | \mathcal{F}_u) \middle| \mathcal{F}_t \right)(\omega) = E_P\big(X_\infty - X_u \big| \mathcal{F}_t\big)(\omega)$$

Then the difference of conditional expectations is bounded:

$$\left| E_P(\overline{A}_\infty^{(m)} - \overline{A}_t^{(m)} | \mathcal{F}_t) - E_P(\overline{A}_\infty^{(n)} - \overline{A}_t^{(n)} | \mathcal{F}_t) \right| \le E_P\Big(|X_t - X_u| \big| \mathcal{F}_t \big) \le E_P\big(W(2^{-n}) \big| \mathcal{F}_t\big)$$

The assumptions of lemma 28 are satisfied, giving

$$E_P\left(\sup_t \big(\overline{A}_t^{(m)} - \overline{A}_t^{(n)}\big)^2 \right) \le c \left\{ E_P\big(W(2^{-n})^2\big) + 2C E_P\big(W(2^{-n})^2\big)^{1/2} \right\} \to 0 \quad \text{as } n \to \infty,\ m > n$$

We show the space of processes

$$\mathcal{S}_2 := \left\{ Z(t,\omega)\ (\mathcal{F}_t)\text{-adapted with } \| Z \|_{\mathcal{S}_2}^2 := E_P\left(\sup_t Z_t^2 \right) < \infty \right\} \tag{7.1}$$

is complete under the $\| \cdot \|_{\mathcal{S}_2}$ norm.

Suppose $(Z_t^{(n)} : t \ge 0, n \in \mathbb{N})$ is a Cauchy sequence in $\mathcal{S}_2$. In particular there exists a sequence (N_k) with

$$E\left(\sup_t \big(Z_t^{(n)} - Z_t^{(m)} \big)^2 \right) \le 2^{-k}, \quad \forall n, m \ge N_k$$

For each t define

$$Z_t^{(\infty)} = Z_t^{(N_0)} + \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \big(Z_t^{(N_{k+1})}(\omega) - Z_t^{(N_k)}(\omega) \big)$$

where $\forall t$ the series converges in $L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, P)$. Then by triangle inequality

$$\| Z^{(\infty)} - Z^{(m)} \|_{\mathcal{S}_2} = E\left(\sup_t \big(Z_t^{(\infty)} - Z_t^{(m)} \big)^2 \right)^{1/2} \le E\left(\sup_t \big(Z_t^{(m)} - Z_t^{(N_k)} \big)^2 \right)^{1/2} + E\left(\sup_t \big(Z_t^{(\infty)} - Z_t^{(N_k)} \big)^2 \right)^{1/2} \le 2^{-k/2} + \sqrt{\sum_{h=k}^{\infty} 2^{-h}}$$

which is arbitrarily small for $m \ge N_k$ and k large enough.

By completeness, there is a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted process $A_t(\omega) \in S_2$ with

$$E_P\left(\sup_t \{\overline{A}_t^{(n)} - A_t\}^2\right) \to 0$$

From convergence in quadratic mean it follows that there is a subsequence (n_i) such that

$$\sup_t |\overline{A}_t^{(n_i)}(\omega) - A_t(\omega)| \to 0 \quad P\text{-almost surely} .$$

Next we show that $A_t(\omega)$ is continuous. For $t = k2^{-n}$,

$$\Delta\overline{A}_t^n = E_P\left(X_{(k)2^n} - X_{(k-1)2^n}\middle|\mathcal{F}_{(k-1)2^{-n}}\right) \le E_P\big(W(2^{-n})\big|\mathcal{F}_{(k-1)2^{-n}}\big)$$

where on the right hand side we have an uniformly integrable martingale. We have

$$E_P\left(\sup_t (\Delta\overline{A}_t^n)^2\right) \le E_P\left(\sup_k E_P\big(W(2^{-n})\big|\mathcal{F}_{(k-1)2^{-n}}\big)^2\right) \le 4E_P\left(W(2^{-n})^2\right) \to 0 \qquad \text{as } n \to \infty$$

by Doob L^p-martingale inequality. In particular there is a further subsequence (n_j) such that

$$\sup_t \Delta\overline{A}_t^{n_j}(\omega) \to 0 \qquad P\text{- almost surely as } j \to \infty$$

Almost sure continuity follows:

$$\begin{aligned}\sup_t |\Delta A_t(\omega)| &\le \sup_t |\Delta A_t(\omega) - \Delta A_t^{(n_j)}(\omega)| + \sup_t |\Delta A_t^{(n_j)}(\omega)| \\ &\le 2\sup_t |A_t(\omega) - A_t^{(n_j)}(\omega)| + \sup_t |\Delta A_t^{(n_j)}(\omega)|\end{aligned}$$

which for almost all ω is arbitrary small for j large enough.

We show that $M_t := (X_t - A_t)$ is a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-martingale. Since M_t is continuous and square integrable since $X_t(\omega)$ and $A_t(\omega)$ are.

By using lemma 23 it is enough to show the martingale property for $s < t$ with $s, t \in D_N = \{k2^{-N} : k \in \mathbb{Z}\}$, and $B \in \mathcal{F}_s$:

$$\begin{aligned} E_P\big((M_t - M_s)\mathbf{1}_B\big) &= E\big((X_t - X_s)\mathbf{1}_B\big) - E\big((A_t - A_s)\mathbf{1}_B\big) \\ = E\big((X_t - X_s)\mathbf{1}_B\big) - E\big((A_t^{(n)} - A_s^{(n)})\mathbf{1}_B\big) &+ E((A_t - A_t^{(n)})\mathbf{1}_B) - E\big((A_s - A_s^{(n)})\mathbf{1}_B\big) \\ &= 0 + E((A_t - A_t^{(n)})\mathbf{1}_B) - E\big((A_s - A_s^{(n)})\mathbf{1}_B\big) \to 0 \text{ as } n \to \infty \end{aligned}$$

where the last identity holds $\forall n \ge N$ by the discrete time martingale property, and by the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality,

$$\left|E_P\big((\overline{A}_t^{(n)} - A_t)\mathbf{1}_B\big)\right| \le E_P\left(\sup_t (\overline{A}_t^{(n)} - A_t)^2\right)^{1/2} \sqrt{P(B)} \longrightarrow 0.$$

For the general case, by using the localization

$$X_t = \lim_{C\to\infty} X_t^{\tau_C}(\omega) = X_0 + \lim_{C\to\infty} M_t^{(C)}(\omega) + \lim_{C\to\infty} A_t^{(C)}(\omega) = X_0 + M_t + A_t$$

where $M_t^{(C)}$ are continuous true martingales and $A_t^{(C)}$ are continuous increasing processes with $M_0^{(C)}(\omega) = A_0^{(C)}(\omega) = 0$ and

$$M_t^{(C)}(\omega) = M_t^{(C+1)}(\omega) \text{ and } A_t^{(C)}(\omega) = A_t^{(C+1)}(\omega) \text{ on } [0, \tau_C]$$

This implies that the limits $M_t(\omega)$ and $A_t(\omega)$ exist with $M_t^{(C)} = M_{t\wedge\tau_C}$ and $A_t^{(C)} = A_{t\wedge\tau_C}$. Therefore A_t is continuous and non-decreasing and M_t is a *local* martingale with localizing sequence $(\tau_C : C \in \mathbb{N})$ □

Remark 14. *Note that without additional assumptions, it is not possible to show that M_t is a true martingale: for $t > s$ and $B \in \mathcal{F}_s$*

$$E_P\big((M_t - M_s)\mathbf{1}_B\big) = E_P\big(\lim_{C\to\infty}(M_{t\wedge\tau_C} - M_{s\wedge\tau_C})\mathbf{1}_B\big) \tag{7.2}$$

$$\stackrel{?}{=} \lim_{C\to\infty} E_P\big((M_{t\wedge\tau_C} - M_{s\wedge\tau_C})\mathbf{1}_B\big) = 0 \tag{7.3}$$

the interchange of limit and expectation is not always justified.

Definition 35. *1. the right continuous adapted process $(X_t(\omega))$ is in the class D (D is for Doob) is the family of random variables*

$$\Big\{ X_\tau(\omega) : \tau \text{ is a stopping time} \Big\}$$

is uniformly integrable.

2. *We say that a right continuous $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted process $(X_t(\omega))$ is in the class DL (local Doob) if for each $t > 0$ the family of random variables*

$$\Big\{ X_\tau(\omega) : \tau \text{ is a stopping time with } \tau(\omega) \le t \text{ a.s.} \Big\}$$

is uniformly integrable,

Exercise 16. *1. A local martingale M_t of class DL is a true martingale*

2. *A local martingale M_t of class D is an uniformly integrable martingale. .*

Proof

1. Let (τ_n) be a localizing sequence. For $0 \le s \le t$, $B \in \mathcal{F}_s$ we have

$$E_P\big((M_t - M_s)\mathbf{1}_B\big) = E_P\big(\lim_{n\to\infty}(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{s\wedge\tau_n})\mathbf{1}_B\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E_P\big((M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{s\wedge\tau_n})\mathbf{1}_B\big) = 0$$

   where the last step is justified since the family $\{|M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{s\wedge\tau_n}| : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ is uniformly integrable by assumption.

2. M_t is a martingale by the previous step, and it is clear that M_t is uniformly integrable since determistic times are stopping times.

Corollary 15. *A continuous $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-submartingale of class DL has unique Doob-Meyer decomposition*

$$X_t(\omega) = X_0(\omega) + M_t(\omega) + A_t(\omega)$$

where $M_0(\omega) = A_0(\omega) = 0$*,* M_t *is a continuous true* $(\mathcal{F}_t)$*-martingale and* A_t *is continuous and non-decreasing with* $E(A_t) < \infty$

Moreover if X_t *is of class* D*, the martingale* M_t *is uniformly integrable and* $E(A_\infty) < \infty$*.*

Proof When X_t is of class DL, for t and $B \in \mathcal{F}_t$, by the characterization of convergence in $L^1(P)$ we have

$$E_P\big(|X_t - X_{t\wedge\tau_C}|\big) \to 0 \text{ as } C \to \infty$$

Since A is non-decreasing by the monotone convergence theorem

$$E_P\big(A_t - A_{t\wedge\tau_C}\big) \to 0 \text{ as } C \to \infty$$

Therefore

$$\| M_t - M_{t\wedge\tau_C} \|_{L^1(P)} \leq \| X_t - X_{t\wedge\tau_C} \|_{L^1(P)} + \| A_t - A_{t\wedge\tau_C} \|_{L^1(P)} \to 0$$

which justifies the interchange of limit and expectation in equation 7.2.

When X_t is of class D it is uniformly integrable, therefore $X_t \to X_\infty$ almost surely and in $L^1(P)$ by the Doob martingale convergence theorem, and by the martingale property

$$E_P(A_\infty) = \lim_{t\uparrow\infty} E_P(A_t) = \lim_{t\uparrow\infty} E_P(X_t - X_0) = E_P(X_\infty - X_0) < \infty,$$

which means that

$$M_t = (X_t - X_0 + A_t) \to M_\infty = (X_\infty - X_0 + A_\infty)$$

P-almost surely and in $L^1(P)$ sense. In particular M_t is uniformly integrable. □

7.4 Quadratic and predictable variation of a continuous local martingale

Let M_t be a continuous local martingale in the $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-filtration, and (τ_n) a localizing sequence. Note that we can choose (τ_n) such that $|M_t^{\tau_n}(\omega)| \leq n$.

By Jensen inequality, the stopped process $(M_t^{\tau_n})^2$ is a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-submartingale, with Doob decomposition

$$(M_t^{\tau_n})^2 = M_0^2 + N_t^{(n)} + \langle M^{\tau_n} \rangle_t$$

where $\langle M^{\tau_n} \rangle_t$ is a continuous non-decreasing process and $N_t^{(n)}$ is a local martingale.

Since $\tau_n \leq \tau_{n+1}$ and the Doob-Meyer decomposition is unique it follows that

$$N_t^{(n)} \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t) = N_t^{(n+1)} \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t) = N_t \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t) \quad \text{and}$$
$$\langle M^{\tau_n} \rangle_t \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t) = \langle M^{\tau_{n+1}} \rangle_t \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t) = \langle M \rangle_t \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t)$$

where $N_t := \lim_{n\uparrow\infty} N_t^{(n)}$ is a local martingale and $\langle M \rangle_t = \lim_{n\uparrow\infty} \langle M^{\tau_n} \rangle_t$ is a continuous increasing process, which give the Doob-Meyer decomposition

$$M_t^2 = M_0^2 + N_t + \langle M \rangle_t$$

The process $\langle M\rangle_t$ is the *predictable variation* of the local martingale M_t. Note that

$$M_t - M_s = 0 \quad P\text{-almost surely} \implies \langle M\rangle_t = \langle M\rangle_s \quad P\text{-almost surely}$$

Definition 36. *Let M_t, $\widetilde{M}_t$ $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-local martingales. We define by polarization the predictable covariation as*

$$\langle M,\widetilde{M}\rangle_t := \frac{1}{4}\big(\langle M+\widetilde{M}\rangle_t - \langle M-\widetilde{M}\rangle_t\big) = \frac{1}{2}\big(\langle M+\widetilde{M}\rangle_t - \langle M\rangle_t - \langle \widetilde{M}\rangle_t\big)$$

Note that $\langle M,M\rangle_t = \langle M\rangle_t$.

Proposition 24. *$\langle M,\widetilde{M}\rangle_t$ is the unique continuous process of finite (total) variation such that $\langle M,\widetilde{M}\rangle_0 = 0$ and*

$$M_t\widetilde{M}_t = M_0\widetilde{M}_0 + \widehat{N}_t + \langle M,\widetilde{M}\rangle_t \tag{7.4}$$

where $\widehat{N}_t$ is a local martingale with $\widehat{N}_t = 0$.

Proof Since $(M_t \pm \widetilde{M}_t)$ are local martingales with Doob-Meyer decompositions

$$(M_t \pm \widetilde{M}_t)^2 = (M_0 \pm \widetilde{M}_0)^2 + N_t^{(\pm)} + \langle M \pm \widetilde{M}\rangle_t$$

we use the polarization identity

$$M_t\widetilde{M}_t = \frac{1}{4}\Big\{(M_t+\widetilde{M}_t)^2 - (M_t-\widetilde{M}_t)^2\Big\}$$

to obtain the semimartingale decomposition (7.4) with $\widehat{N}_t = \big(N_t^{(+)} - N_t^{(-)}\big)/4$ □

Exercise 17. *Let $(B_t,\widetilde{B}_t)_{t\geq 0}$ a pair of independent Brownian motion, and consider the filtration $\mathcal{F}_t = \sigma(B_s,\widetilde{B}_s : s\leq t)\vee\mathcal{N}^P$ completed by the sets of measure zero.*

B_t and $\widetilde{B}_t$ are square integrable martingales.

$$\begin{aligned} &E_P\big(B_t\widetilde{B}_t - B_s\widetilde{B}_s\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big)\\ &= B_sE_P\big(\widetilde{B}_t-\widetilde{B}_s\big|\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) + \widetilde{B}_sE_P\big(B_t-B_s\big|\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) + E_P\big((B_t-B_s)(\widetilde{B}_t-\widetilde{B}_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) =\\ &B_sE_P\big(\widetilde{B}_t-\widetilde{B}_s\big) + \widetilde{B}_sE_P\big(B_t-B_s\big) + E_P\big((B_t-B_s\big)E_P\big(\widetilde{B}_t-\widetilde{B}_s\big) = 0\end{aligned}$$

therefore the product $(B_t\widetilde{B}_t)$ is a martingale and from the uniqueness of the Doob-Meyer decomposition it follows that $\langle B,\widetilde{B}\rangle_t = 0$.

For $\alpha\in[0,1]$, consider the process

$$W_t = \sqrt{\alpha}B_t + \sqrt{(1-\alpha)}\widetilde{B}_t$$

It follows that (W_t) is a Brownian motion adapted to the filtration $\mathcal{F}_t$. We have

$$\begin{aligned} &E_P\big(B_tW_t - B_sW_s\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big)\\ &= B_sE_P\big(W_t-W_s\big|\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) + \widetilde{W}_sE_P\big(W_t-W_s\big|\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) + E_P\big((B_t-B_s)(W_t-W_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big)\\ &= 0 + \sqrt{\alpha}E_P\big((B_t-B_s)^2\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) + \sqrt{(1-\alpha)}E_P\big((B_t-B_s)(\widetilde{B}_t-\widetilde{B}_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big)\\ &= \sqrt{\alpha}(\langle B\rangle_t - \langle B\rangle_s) = \sqrt{\alpha}(t-s)\end{aligned}$$

It follows that $\langle B,W\rangle_t = \sqrt{\alpha}\langle B\rangle_t = \sqrt{\alpha}t$

Theorem 23. *Let M be a continuous martingale with $|M_t(\omega)| \le C < \infty \, \forall t > 0$. Then*

$$[M]_t = \lim_{|\Delta|\to 0} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} (M_{t\wedge t_k} - M_{t\wedge t_{k-1}})^2$$

where the limit exists in $L^2(P)$ sense uniformly on compacts, with

$$\Delta = (0 \le t_0 < t_1 < \dots, t_n \dots), \quad |\Delta| := \sup_i (t_i - t_{i-1}), \quad \sup\{t_n \in \Delta\} = \infty$$

$[M]_t$ is continuous and non-decreasing and satisfies:

$$M_t^2 = M_0^2 + [M]_t + N_t$$

where N_t is a true martingale. In other words $[M]_t = \langle M \rangle_t$.

Proof From Revuz-Yor *Continuous martingales and Brownian motion.*

Without loss of generality we assume $M_0 = 0$, otherwise consider $M_t = (M_t - M_0)$. Lets denote

$$T_t^{\Delta}(M) := \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} (M_{t\wedge t_k} - M_{t\wedge t_{k-1}})^2 \tag{7.5}$$

It follows that $(M_t^2 - T_t^{\Delta}(M))$ is a martingale since for $0 \le s \le t$

$$(M_t - M_s)^2 = M_t^2 - M_s^2 + 2M_s(M_t - M_s)$$

and by the martingale property

$$E\big((M_t - M_s)^2 | \mathcal{F}_s\big) = E\big(M_t^2 - M_s^2 \big| \mathcal{F}_s\big) \tag{7.6}$$

$$= \sum_{t_k \in \Delta} E\big(M_{t_k\wedge t}^2 - M_{t_{k-1}\vee s}^2 \big| \mathcal{F}_s\big) = \sum_{t_k \in \Delta} E\big(\big\{M_{t_k\wedge t} - M_{t_{k-1}\vee s}\big\}^2 \big| \mathcal{F}_s\big) = E(T_t^{\Delta}(M) - T_s^{\Delta}(M) \big| \mathcal{F}_s\big)$$

In particular for fixed partitions Δ, Δ'

$$X_t^{\Delta,\Delta'} := T_t^{\Delta}(M) - T_t^{\Delta'}(M)$$

is a martingale. We will show that $X_t = X_t^{\Delta,\Delta'} \to 0$ in $L^2(P)$ uniformly on compact intervals as $|\Delta|, |\Delta'| \to 0$.

Denote $\Delta\Delta' = \Delta \cup \Delta'$, the coarsest partition of $\mathbb{R}^+$ containing both Δ and Δ'. Note that for fixed Δ, Δ', X_t is bounded on compact intervals, since is the sum of finitely many squared differences of the bounded process M.

Consider the process $T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(X)$, which is defined as in 7.5 replacing the martingale M_t with the martingale X_t. (We don't want and we don't need to write the explicit expression).

From 7.6 we see that

$$(X_t^2 - T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(X))$$

is also a martingale. Since $(a-b)^2 \le 2(a^2+b^2)$, we have

$$E(X_t^2) = E(T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(X)) \le 2E_P\Big(T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(T^{\Delta}(M)) + T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(T^{\Delta'}(M))\Big)$$

We show that $E_P\Big(T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(T^{\Delta}(M))\Big) \longrightarrow 0$. For $s_k \in \Delta\Delta'$, $t_l \in \Delta$ such that $t_l \le s_k < s_{k+1} \le t_{l+1}$,

$$T^{\Delta}_{s_{k+1}}(M) - T^{\Delta}_{s_k}(M) = (M_{s_{k+1}} - M_{t_l})^2 - (M_{s_k} - M_{t_l})^2$$
$$= (M_{s_{k+1}} - M_{s_k})^2 + 2(M_{s_{k+1}} - M_{s_k})(M_{s_k} - M_{t_l}) = (M_{s_{k+1}} + M_{s_k} - 2M_{t_k})(M_{s_{k+1}} - M_{s_k})$$

and for $t = s_n \in \Delta\Delta'$

$$T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(T^{\Delta}(M)) = \sum_{k=0}^{n-1}\big(T^{\Delta}_{s_{k+1}}(M) - T^{\Delta}_{s_k}(M)\big)^2$$
$$\le \sup_{k\le n}(M_{s_{k+1}} + M_{s_k} - 2M_{t_l})^2 \sum_{k=0}^{n-1}(M_{s_{k+1}} - M_{s_k})^2$$
$$= \sup_{k\le n}(M_{s_{k+1}} + M_{s_k} - 2M_{t_l})^2 T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(M)$$

By taking expectation and using the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality

$$E_P\Big(T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(T^{\Delta}(M))\Big) \le E_P\Big(\sup_{k\le n}(M_{s_{k+1}} + M_{s_k} - 2M_{t_k})^4\Big)^{1/2} E_P\big(\{T_t^{\Delta\Delta'}(M)\}^2\big)^{1/2}$$

Since for P-almost all ω $M_s(\omega)$ is a continuous martingale, it is uniformly continuous on the compact $[0,t]$,

$$\sup_{k\le n}|M_{s_{k+1}} + M_{s_k} - 2M_{t_k}| \to 0$$

P-a.s. as $|\Delta|, |\Delta'| \to 0$. Since $|M_t(\omega)| \le C$, convergence in $L^p(\Omega)$ follows as well.

In order to complete the proof we show that

$$E_P\big(\{T_t^{\Delta}(M)\}^2\big)$$

remains bounded as $|\Delta| \to 0$.

Assuming that $t = t_n \in \Delta$, denoting $\Delta M_k = (M_{t_k} - M_{t_{k-1}})$

$$\{T_t^{\Delta}(M)\}^2 = \sum_{k=1}^{n}(\Delta M_k)^4 + 2\sum_{k=1}^{n}\Big(\sum_{j>k}^{n}(\Delta M_j)^2\Big)(\Delta M_k)^2,$$

$$E_P\Big(\{T_t^{\Delta}(M)\}^2\Big) \le E_P\Big(T_t^{\Delta}(M)\sup_{k\le n}(\Delta M_k)^2\Big) + 2\sum_{k=1}^{n} E_P\Big((M_t - M_{t_k})^2(\Delta M_k)^2\Big)$$

where in the last term we have taken conditional expectation with respect to $\mathcal{F}_{t_k}$ and used the martingale property

$$E_P\big(M_{t_n}^2 - M_{t_k}^2 \big| \mathcal{F}_{t_k}\big) = E_P\big((M_t - M_{t_k})^2 \big| \mathcal{F}_{t_k}\big)$$

We get

$$E_P\Big(\big\{T_t^\Delta(M)\big\}^2\Big) \le E_P\Big(T_t^\Delta(M)\sup_{k\le n}\Big\{(\Delta M_k)^2 + 2(M_t - M_{t_k})^2\Big\}\Big)$$
$$\le E_P(T_t^\Delta(M))12C^2 = E_P(M_t^2)12C^2 \le 12C^4$$

This shows that for each t and every sequence of partitions Δ_n with $|\Delta_n| \to 0$,

$T_t^{\Delta_n}(M)$ is a Cauchy sequence in $L^2(\Omega)$.

Since for fixed k, n $(T_t^{\Delta_n}(M) - T_t^{\Delta_k}(M))$ is a martingale, by the Doob L^p-martingale inequality

$$E_P\Big(\sup_{s\le t}\big(T_s^{\Delta_n}(M) - T_s^{\Delta_k}(M)\big)^2\Big) \le 4E_P\Big(\big(T_t^{\Delta_n}(M) - T_t^{\Delta_k}(M)\big)^2\Big)$$

which means that $T_s^\Delta(M)$ is a Cauchy sequence in the complete normed space $\mathcal{S}_2$ (7.1), and there is a limiting process $[M]_t$ such that

$$E_P\Big(\sup_{s\le t}\big([M]_s - T_s^{\Delta_n}(M)\big)^2\Big) \to 0$$

as $|\Delta_n| \to 0$, which does not depend on the choice of the sequence (Δ_n). In particular there is a subsequence $n(j)$ such that

$$\sup_{s\le t}\big|[M]_s - T_s^{\Delta_{n(j)}}(M)\big| \to 0 \qquad P\text{-almost surely .}$$

It follows that $[M]_s$ is non-decreasing since $T_s^\Delta(M)$ with $\Delta = \Delta_{n(j)}$ is non-decreasing. Since the approximating processes $T_s^\Delta(M)$ with $\Delta = \Delta_{n(j)}$ are continuous and converging P-almost surely uniformly on compacts, by the Ascoli-Arzela equicontinuity criterium it follows that the limiting process $[M]_t$ is almost surely continuous.

We check the martingale property: for $s \le t,\ A \in \mathcal{F}_s$

$$E_P\Big((M_t^2 - M_s^2)\mathbf{1}_A\Big) = E_P\Big((T_t^\Delta(M) - T_s^\Delta(M))\mathbf{1}_A\Big) \to E_P\Big(([M]_t - [M]_s))\mathbf{1}_A\Big)$$

as $\Delta \to 0$, since $T_t^\Delta(M) \stackrel{L^2}{\to} [M]_t$. Therefore $(M_t^2 - [M]_t)$ is a true martingale and by the uniqueness of the Doob-Meyer decomposition $[M]_t = \langle M\rangle_t$. (This does not hold for processes with jumps!) □

Remark 15.

$$[M]_t = \lim_{|\Delta|\to 0}\sum_{t_i\in\Delta}\big(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}\big)^2$$
$$\langle M\rangle_t = \lim_{|\Delta|\to 0}\sum_{t_i\in\Delta} E\Big(\big(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}\big)^2\Big|\mathcal{F}_{t_{i-1}}\Big)$$

where the limits are taken in probability. These coincide when M is a continuous square integrable martingale but are different when M_t has jumps.

Corollary 16. *Let M_t be a continuous local martingale. Then the process*

$$[M]_t = \lim_{|\Delta|\to 0} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \big(M_{t\wedge t_k} - M_{t\wedge t_{k-1}}\big)^2$$

exists as a limit in probability, it is non-decreasing and we have $[M]_t = \langle M\rangle_t$ in the Doob-Meyer decomposition

$$M_t^2 = M_0^2 + [M]_t + N_t$$

where N_t is a local martingale with $N_0 = 0$.

By polarization we obtain also the quadratic covariation of two **continuous** *local martingales M_t and $\widetilde{M}_t$,*

$$[M, \widetilde{M}]_t = \lim_{|\Delta|\to 0} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \big(M_{t\wedge t_k} - M_{t\wedge t_{k-1}}\big)\big(\widetilde{M}_{t\wedge t_k} - \widetilde{M}_{t\wedge t_{k-1}}\big)$$

which coincides with the predictable covariation $\langle M, \widetilde{M}\rangle_t$.

Proof Without loss of generality, let $M_0 = 0$. There is a localizing sequence $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$ of stopping times such that and $M_t^{\tau_n}$ is a true martingale with $|M_t^{\tau_n}| \le n$.

$N_t^{(n)} = \big(M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n} - [M^{\tau_n}]_t\big)$ is a true martingale which is constant on the interval $[\tau_n, \infty)$.

Since $N_t^{(n+1)} = \big(M^2_{t\wedge\tau_{n+1}} - [M^{\tau_{n+1}}]_t\big)$ is also a true martingale, by the uniqueness of the Doob-Meyer decomposition it follows that

$$[M^{\tau_{n+1}}]_t \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t) = [M^{\tau_n}]_t \mathbf{1}(\tau_n > t)$$

Define

$$[M]_t(\omega) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbf{1}(\tau_{n-1} < t \le \tau_n)[M^{\tau_n}]_t$$

with $\tau_{n-1} \equiv 0$. Note that this sum for each ω contains finitely many nonzero terms. We see that $(M_t^2 - [M]_t)$ is a local martingale with localizing sequence τ_n.

For fixed t, $T_t^{\Delta}(M) \xrightarrow{P} [M]_t$ (in probability):

$$P\bigg(\sup_{t\in[0,T]} \big|[M]_t - T_t^{\Delta}(M)\big| > \varepsilon\bigg) =$$

$$P\bigg(\{\tau_n \le t\} \bigcap \Big\{\sup_{t\in[0,T]} \big|[M]_t - T_t^{\Delta}(M)\big| > \varepsilon\Big\}\bigg) + P\bigg(\{\tau_n > t\} \bigcap \Big\{\sup_{t\in[0,T]} \big|[M]_{t\wedge\tau_n} - T^{\Delta}_{t\wedge\tau_n}(M)\big| > \varepsilon\Big\}\bigg)$$

$$\le P\big(\tau_n \le t\big) + P\bigg(\sup_{t\in[0,T]} \big|[M^{\tau_n}]_t - T_t^{\Delta}(M^{\tau_n})\big| > \varepsilon\bigg)$$

where for n large enough the first term is is arbitrarily small since $\mathbf{1}(\tau_n \le t) \to 0$ P-a.s, and for such fixed n we let $|\Delta| \to 0$ to make the second term small $\square$.

Lemma 29. *Let $(M_t(\omega) : t \in \mathbb{N}) \subseteq L^2(P)$ a square integrable $\mathbb{F}$-martingale. The following conditions are equivalent:*

1. *$(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is bounded in $L^2(P)$, that is*

$$\sup_{t\in\mathbb{N}} E_P(M_t^2) < \infty$$

2.

$$\sum_{t=1}^{\infty} E\big((M_t - M_{t-1})^2\big) < \infty$$

3. *there is a r.v. $M_\infty \in L^2(P)$ such that $M_t = E(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t)$ and $M_t \to M_\infty$ in $L^2(P)$.*

Proof. Note that for $s \le t \in \mathbb{N}$, using telescoping sums, by the martingale property

$$E\big((M_t - M_s)^2\big) = E\Bigg(\Big\{\sum_{n=s+1}^{t} \Delta M_n\Big\}^2\Bigg) = \sum_{n=s+1}^{t} E\big((\Delta M_n)^2\big)$$

For $s = 0$, we see that (1) $\iff$ (2).

When (1) holds, $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is an uniformly integrable martingale and $\exists M_\infty(\omega)$ such that $M_t = E(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t)$ and $M_t \to M_\infty$ P-almost surely and in $L^1(P)$. We show that $M_t \to M_\infty$ also in $L^2(P)$.

For $t, N \in \mathbb{N}$,

$$E\big((M_{t+N} - M_t)^2\big) = E\Bigg(\Big\{\sum_{s=t}^{t+N} \Delta M_s\Big\}^2\Bigg) = \sum_{s=t}^{t+N} E\big((\Delta M_s)^2\big)$$

where when we develop the square by the martingale property the cross terms have zero expectation. For fixed t as $N \to \infty$ by Fatou lemma

$$E\big((M_\infty - M_t)^2\big) \le \sum_{s=t}^{\infty} E\big((\Delta M_s)^2\big) \to 0$$

as $t \to \infty$ by the hypothesis (2). We see also that

$$0 \le E\big((M_\infty - M_t)^2\big) = E\big((M_{t+N} - M_t)^2\big) + E\big((M_{t+N} - M_\infty)^2\big)$$
$$= \sum_{s=t+1}^{t+N} E\big((\Delta M_s)^2\big) + E\big((M_{t+N} - M_\infty)^2\big) \longrightarrow \sum_{s=t+1}^{\infty} E\big((\Delta M_s)^2\big) + 0 \quad \square$$

Proposition 25. *Let $(M_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ a continuous martingale with $E(M_t^2) < \infty$ $\forall t \ge 0$.*

Then $(M_t^2 - \langle M\rangle_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ is a true $\mathbb{F}$-martingale, in particular

$$E(M_t^2) = E(M_0^2) + E(\langle M\rangle_t)$$

By polarization, if $(\widetilde{M}_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+) \subseteq L^2(P)$ is another continuous martingale, $(M_t\widetilde{M}_t - \langle M, \widetilde{M}\rangle_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ is a true $\mathbb{F}$-martingale, in particular

$$E(M_t\widetilde{M}_t) = E(M_0\widetilde{M}_0) + E(\langle M, \widetilde{M}\rangle_t)$$

Proof Let $\tau_0 = 0$ and $\tau_n(\omega) = \inf\{t : |M_t(\omega)| > n\}$, with $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ as $n \uparrow \infty$.

For fixed n, $(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \geq 0)$ is a bounded martingale, and $(M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n} - \langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \in \mathbb{N})$ is a true martingale by theorem (23).

For fixed t consider the telescopic series

$$M_t(\omega) = M_0 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty}(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{t\wedge\tau_{n-1}})$$

By Doob's optional stopping theorem $M_{t\wedge\tau_n} = E(M_t|\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau_n}) \in L^2(P)$.

$$E\biggl(\biggl\{\sum_{r=n}^{n+k}(M_{t\wedge\tau_r} - M_{t\wedge\tau_{r-1}})\biggr\}^2\biggr) =$$

$$\sum_{r=n}^{n+k} E_P\Bigl((M_{t\wedge\tau_r} - M_{t\wedge\tau_{r-1}})^2\Bigr) + 2\sum_{r=n}^{n+k}\sum_{n\leq s<r} E_P\Bigl(E_P\bigl(M_{t\wedge\tau_r} - M_{t\wedge\tau_{r-1}}\big|\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau_s}\bigr)\bigl(M_{t\wedge\tau_s} - M_{t\wedge\tau_{s-1}}\bigr)\Bigr)$$

$$= \sum_{r=n}^{n+k} E_P\Bigl(\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_r} - \langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_{r-1}}\Bigr) = E_P\Bigl(\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_{n+k}} - \langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n}\Bigr)$$

and by lemma (29) applied with respect to the discrete time filtration $(\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau_n} : n \in \mathbb{N})$

$$M_{t\wedge\tau_n} \to M_t \quad \text{in } L^2(P)$$

which implies

$$E(M_t^2) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E(M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n}) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E\bigl(\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n}\bigr) = E(\langle M\rangle_t)$$

where the last equality follows by monotone convergence. This gives integrability we show the martingale property: for $s \leq t$, $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$, Since $M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n} \to M^2_t$ in $L^1(P)$,

$$E((M_t^2 - M_s^2)\mathbf{1}_A) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E\bigl((M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M^2_{s\wedge\tau_n})\mathbf{1}_A\bigr)$$
$$= E\bigl((\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n} - \langle M\rangle_{s\wedge\tau_n})\mathbf{1}_A\bigr) \to E\bigl((\langle M\rangle_t - \langle M\rangle_s)\mathbf{1}_A\bigr)$$

where we use monotone convergence again □

Remark The $L^2(P)$-isometry $E((M_t - M_0)^2) = E(\langle M\rangle_t)$ is the key step in the construction of the Ito integral. Recall the **monotone class theorem**:

A collection $\mathcal{C}$ of bounded functions $X : \Omega \to \mathbb{R}$ is a *monotone class* when

1. contains the constants
2. it is a vector space
3. If a sequence $\{X_n : n \in \mathbb{N}\} \subseteq \mathcal{C}$ is such that

   $$0 \leq X_n(\omega) \uparrow X(\omega) \quad \forall\omega$$

   and the limit $X(\omega)$ is a bounded function, then necessarily $X \in \mathcal{C}$.

   The theorem says that if a monotone class $\mathcal{C}$ contains the indicators of a family of events $\mathcal{I}$ which is closed under finite intersections, then $\mathcal{C}$ contains all bounded $\sigma(\mathcal{I})$-measurable random variables.

To show that a property $(*)$ holds for all predictable processes, we show first that the class $\mathcal{C}$ of bounded processes which satisfy the property $(*)$ is a monotone class, and then show that it holds for the simple predictable process of the form

$$X(t,\omega) = F(\omega)\mathbf{1}(a < t \le b), \qquad \text{with} 0 \le a < b, \quad F \in \mathcal{F}_a$$

Since the product-events $(a,b] \times F$ with $F \in \mathcal{F}_a$ generate the $\mathbb{F}$-predictable σ-algebra $\mathcal{P}$ on $[0,\infty)\times\Omega$ by the monotone class theorem all bounded $\mathbb{F}$-predictable processes satisfy (*).

Lemma 30. *If $T(\omega)$ is a $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time we defined the strict past stopped σ-algebra*

$$\mathcal{F}_{T-} = \sigma\big(A \cap \{T < t\} : t > 0, A \in \mathcal{F}_t\big)$$

and shown that

$$\sigma(T) \subseteq \mathcal{F}_{T-} \subseteq \mathcal{F}_T = \big\{A : (A \cap \{T \le t\}) \in \ \mathcal{F}_t \forall t \ge 0\big\}$$

By the monotone class argument We have the characterization

$$\mathcal{F}_{T-} = \sigma\big(X_T : \ X \text{ is a bounded and predictable } \big) = \sigma(\{u < T\} \cap F : \ 0 \le u, F \in \mathcal{F}_u)$$

Lemma 31. *If S is a predictable stopping time and $T_n \uparrow S$ with $T_n < S$ is an announcing sequence, then $\mathcal{F}_{S-} = \bigvee_n \mathcal{F}_{T_n}$.*

Lemma 32. *If M is an uniformly integrable $\mathbb{F}$-martingale and $S \le T$ are $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times and S is predictable, then $E(M_T|\mathcal{F}_{S-}) = M_{S-}$*

Definition 37. *If $X(t,\omega)$ is a bounded $\mathcal{B}([0,\infty)) \otimes \mathcal{F}$ measurable process there exists its $\mathbb{F}$-predictable projection ${}^pX$, which is a predictable process such that for all predictable stopping times S*

$${}^pX_S\mathbf{1}(S < \infty) = E\big(X_S\mathbf{1}(S < \infty)\big|\mathcal{F}_{S-}\big)$$

Proof. Consider a simple predictable process

$$X(t,\omega) = \mathbf{1}(u < t \le v)F(\omega)$$

with $F(\omega) \in L^{(\infty)}(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$, take $M_t = E(X|\mathcal{F}_t)$ and define

$${}^pX(t,\omega) = M_{t-}(\omega)\mathbf{1}(u < t \le v)$$

which is predictable since it is left continuous and $\mathbb{F}$-adapted. For every predictable time S we have

$$E(X_S\mathbf{1}(X_S < \infty)|\mathcal{F}_{S-}) = \mathbf{1}(u < S \le v)E(F|\mathcal{F}_{S-}) =$$
$$\mathbf{1}(u < S \le v)E(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_{S-}) = M_{S-}\mathbf{1}(u < S \le v) = {}^pX_S\mathbf{1}(S < \infty)$$

□

Remark 16. *Note that in a somehow less rigorous notation sometimes in the literature then predictable projection of the constant process $X_t(\omega) = F(\omega)$ is denoted as ${}^pX_t = E(F|\mathcal{F}_{t-})$ which is somehow not correct. For example in the filtration generated by a Poisson process N completed by the P-null sets is continuous, $\mathcal{F}^N_t = \mathcal{F}^N_{t-}$, and $E(F|\mathcal{F}_t) = E(F|\mathcal{F}_{t-})$. Nevertheless optional and predictable projections are different! The correct way to define the predictable projection is to take first the prediction martingale $M_t = E(F|\mathcal{F}_t)$ and then limits from the left.*

Exercise 18. *Let $X(t,\omega)$ be a right-continuous $\mathbb{F}$-predictable process. Then*

$$\tau(\omega) = \inf\{t > 0 : \Delta X_t(\omega) > a\}$$

is a $\mathbb{F}$-predictable stopping time.

Proof. There is a sequence of left-continuous $\mathbb{F}$-adapted processes $X^{(n)}(t,\omega)$such that

$$X(t,\omega) = \lim_{n\to\infty} X^{(n)}(t,\omega)$$

then

$$\tau(\omega) =$$
$$\inf\{q \in \mathbb{Q}^+ : X_q(\omega) - X_{q-}(\omega) > a\} \inf\{q \in \mathbb{Q}^+ : \lim_{n\to\infty} \lim_{r\uparrow q} \lim_{n\to\infty} X_r^{(n)}(\omega) - \lim_{n\to\infty} \lim_{r\uparrow q} X_r^{(n)}(\omega) > a\}$$

where we can replace lim by lim sup or lim inf when necessary. τ is the *debut* of the set

$$\big\{(\omega,q) : q \in \mathbb{Q}^+ \text{ and } \big(X(q,\omega) - X(q-,\omega)\big) > a\big\} =$$
$$\big\{(\omega,q) : q \in \mathbb{Q}^+ \text{ and } \lim_{n\to\infty} \lim_{r\uparrow q} X_r^{(n)}(\omega) - \lim_{r\uparrow q} \lim_{n\to\infty} X_r^{(n)}(\omega) > a\big\}$$

which is predictable since it is in the tail σ-algebra generated by the sequence of left continuous adapted processes $X^{(n)}$. By the predictable section theorem in Bass book, the debut of a predictable set is a predictable stopping time.

□

7.5 Optional and predictable projections of a measurable process

Lemma 33. *If $Y(t,\omega)$ is a bounded measurable processes and X is $\mathbb{F}$-optional (predictable) then*

$$^o(XY) = X\, ^oY$$

Proof. Let τ be an $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time, then by the definition of conditional expectation, since X_τ is $\mathcal{F}_\tau$-measurable

$$^o(XY)_\tau \mathbf{1}(\tau < \infty) = E\big(X_\tau Y_\tau \big| \mathcal{F}_\tau\big) = X_\tau E\big(Y_\tau \big| \mathcal{F}_\tau\big) = X_\tau\, ^oY_\tau \mathbf{1}(\tau < \infty)$$

If τ is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable, since X_τ is $\mathcal{F}_{\tau-}$-measurable when X is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable,

$$^p(XY)_\tau \mathbf{1}(\tau < \infty) = E\big(X_\tau Y_\tau \big| \mathcal{F}_{\tau-}\big) = X_\tau E\big(Y_\tau \big| \mathcal{F}_{\tau-}\big) = X_\tau\, ^pY_\tau \mathbf{1}(\tau < \infty)$$

□

7.6 Dual optional and predictable projections of a non-decreasing process

Lemma 34. *(Change of variable formula in Lebesgue-Stieltjes integral) Let $t \mapsto A(t)$ be a non-decreasing cadlag function. We define its right inverse as*

$$C(s) = \inf\{t : A(s) > t\}$$

Then for every non-negative Borel-measurable integral $X(s)$,

$$\int_0^\infty X(s)A(ds) = \int_0^\infty X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s) < \infty)ds \tag{7.7}$$

where the integrals are Riemann Stieltjes integrals. This extends also to integrators $A(t)$ which have finite variation on compact intervals.

Proof. By a monotone class argument, it is enough to show this for the integrands of the form $X(s) = \mathbf{1}(u < s \le v)$ which generate the Borel σ-algebra. We have

$$\int_0^\infty X(s)A(ds) = A(u) - A(v) = \int_{A(u)}^{A(v)} ds = \int_0^\infty \mathbf{1}(A(u) < s \le A(v))ds =$$
$$\int_0^\infty \mathbf{1}(u < C(s) \le v)\mathbf{1}(C(s) < \infty)ds = \int_0^\infty X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s) < \infty)ds$$

□

Definition 38. *Let $A(t,\omega)$ a non-decreasing cadlag process, where we assume that $A(t,\omega)$ is a random variable $\mathcal{F}$-measurable but it does not need to be $\mathbb{F}$-adapted.*

We associate to A a positive measure μ_A on the product σ-algebra $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+)\otimes\mathcal{F}$ by defining the integrals of bounded jointly measurable process $X(t,\omega)$ as

$$\mu_A(X) = \int_{\Omega\times\mathbb{R}^+} X(s,\omega)\mu_A(ds,d\omega) := E\biggl(\int_0^\infty X(s)A(ds)\biggr)$$

In other words $\mu_A(ds,d\omega) = A(ds,\omega)P(d\omega)$ (which is not a product measure) and it is called the Doleans measure of A.

Proposition 26. *μ_A is σ-finite, and to every σ-finite positive measure $\mu(ds,d\omega)$ $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+)\otimes\mathcal{F}$, there exists a non-decreasing cadlag process $A(t,\omega)$, with $A(0)=0$, and $\mu_A = \mu$. A is unique up to indistinguishability.*

Theorem 24. *Let μ_A be the measure corresponding to a non-decreasing cadlag $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+)\otimes\mathcal{F}$-measurable process $A(t,\omega)$. The measure μ_A is $\mathbb{F}$-optional (predictable) if and only if A is $\mathbb{F}$-optional (predictable).*

Proof. (Optional case) For fixed t and $F \in \mathcal{F}$, define $X(s,\omega) = \mathbf{1}_F(\omega)\mathbf{1}(0 \le s \le t)$

Then the optional projection is given by ${}^oX(s,\omega) = E(\mathbf{1}_F|\mathcal{F}_s)\mathbf{1}(0 \le s \le t)$. We introduce the process $Y(s,\omega) = E(\mathbf{1}_F|\mathcal{F}_t)\mathbf{1}(0 \le s \le t) \equiv {}^oX(t)\ \forall s > 0$, which is not necessarily adapted, taking a constant $\mathcal{F}_\tau$-measurable value for all $s \in [0,t]$, satisfying ${}^oY = {}^oX$.

Since by assumption μ_A is optional,

$$E((A_t - A_0)\mathbf{1}_F) = \mu_A(X) = \mu_A({}^oX) = \mu_A({}^oY) = \mu_A(Y) = E\big((A_t - A_0)E(\mathbf{1}_F|\mathcal{F}_t)\big)$$
$$= E\big(E(A_t - A_0|\mathcal{F}_t)E(\mathbf{1}_F|\mathcal{F}_t)\big) = E\big(E(A_t - A_0|\mathcal{F}_t)F\big)$$

where we have used the properties of the conditional expectation. We can do this for all t and $F \in \mathcal{F}$ and the equality

$$E((A_t - A_0)\mathbf{1}_F) = E\big(E(A_t - A_0|\mathcal{F}_t)F\big)$$

which means that $(A_t - A_0) = E(A_t - A_0|\mathcal{F}_t)$ which is $\mathbb{F}$-adapted,and since it is right continuous by assumption, A is $\mathbb{F}$-optional

Assume now that the Doelans measure μ_A is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable. Since $\mathcal{P} \subset \mathcal{O}$, for every bounded measurable process $X(t,\omega)$ ${}^p\big({}^oX\big) = {}^pX$,

$$\mu_A(X) = \mu_A\big({}^pX\big) = \mu_A\big({}^p\big({}^oX\big)\big) = \mu_A\big({}^oX\big)$$

which means that the Doleans measure μ_A is $\mathbb{F}$-optional measure and therefore the $A(t)$ is $\mathbb{F}$-adapted.

We show first that $\Delta A_\tau = A_\tau - A_{\tau-} = 0$ at every totally unaccessible $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time $\tau(\omega)$ (which means that $P(\tau = S) = 0$ for every $\mathbb{F}$-predictable time $S(\omega)$).

Consider $X(t,\omega) = \mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) = t)$, which has predictable projection ${}^pX \equiv 0$, since for every predictable stopping time $S(\omega)$

$${}^pX(S)\mathbf{1}(S < \infty) = E(X_S\mathbf{1}(S < \infty)|\mathcal{F}_{S-}) = P(\tau = S < \infty|\mathcal{F}_{S-}) = 0$$

since τ is totally unaccessible. For such integrand X we have

$$\mu_A(X) = E\bigg(\int_0^\infty \mathbf{1}(\tau(\omega) = s)A(ds)\bigg) = E(\Delta A_\tau) = \mu_A({}^pX) = \mu_A(0) = 0,$$

and since $\Delta A(s) = A(s) - A(s-) \geq 0\ \forall s$, this implies $\Delta A_\tau = 0$ P-almost surely.

We know show that $E(A_S|\mathcal{F}_{S-}) = A_S$ for every $\mathbb{F}$-predictable time S, which implies that $A = {}^pA$ and consequently it is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable.

For $F \in \mathcal{F}$ consider the simple $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+) \otimes \mathcal{F}$-measurable processes $X(t,\omega) = \mathbf{1}_F(\omega)\mathbf{1}(0 \leq t \leq S(\omega))$, and $Y(t,\omega) \equiv {}^p(X)_S$ at all $t \geq 0$, which is not adapted, but has the property ${}^pY = {}^pX$.

Since by assumption μ_A is predictable,

$$E((A_S - A_0)\mathbf{1}_F) = \mu_A(X) = \mu_A({}^pX) = \mu_A({}^pY) = \mu_A(Y) = E\big((A_S - A_0)E(\mathbf{1}_F|\mathcal{F}_{S-}\big)$$
$$= E\big(E(A_S - A_0|\mathcal{F}_{S-})E(\mathbf{1}_F|\mathcal{F}_t\big) = E\big(E(A_S - A_0|\mathcal{F}_{S-})F\big)$$

where we have used the properties of the conditional expectation. We can do this for all S and $F \in \mathcal{F}$ and the equality

$$E((A_S - A_0)\mathbf{1}_F) = E\big(E(A_S - A_0|\mathcal{F}_{S-})F\big)$$

which means that $A_S - A_0 = E(A_S - A_0|\mathcal{F}_{S-})$ for all finite predictable time S, and $(A_\cdot - A_0)$ coincides with its $\mathbb{F}$-predictable projection ${}^p(A_\cdot - A_0)$ which is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable.

In the other direction, lets assume that A_t is non-decreasing $\mathbb{F}$-adapted and cadlag. For every bounded jointly measurable $X(t,\omega)$, by the change of variable lemma 34

$$\mu_A(X) := E\Big(\int_0^\infty X(s)A(ds)\Big) = E\Big(\int_0^\infty X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)ds\Big) =$$
$$\int_0^\infty E\big(X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)\big)ds = \int_0^\infty E\big(X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)\big|\mathcal{F}_{C(s)}\big)ds$$
$$= \int_0^\infty E\big({}^oX(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)\big)ds = E\Big(\int_0^\infty {}^oX(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)ds\Big) =$$
$$E\Big(\int_0^\infty {}^oX(s)A(ds)\Big) = \mu_A({}^oX)$$

where at every s the right-inverse of A defined as

$$C(s) = \inf\big\{t : A(t) > s\big\} \tag{7.8}$$

is an $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time, and we are conditioning with respect to the stopped σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_{C(s)}$ inside the expectation.

Analogously when A_t is non-decreasing $\mathbb{F}$-predictable, for every bounded jointly measurable $X(t,\omega)$, by the change of variable formula

$$\mu_A(X) := E\Big(\int_0^\infty X(s)A(ds)\Big) =$$
$$E\Big(\int_0^\infty X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)ds\Big) = \int_0^\infty E\big(X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)\big)ds =$$
$$\int_0^\infty E\big(X(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)\big|\mathcal{F}_{C(s)-}\big)ds = \int_0^\infty E\big({}^pX(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)\big)ds =$$
$$E\Big(\int_0^\infty {}^pX(C(s))\mathbf{1}(C(s)<\infty)ds\Big) = E\Big(\int_0^\infty {}^pX(s)A(ds)\Big) = \mu_A({}^pX)$$

where the right-inverse process $C(s)$ defined in (7.8) is now a $\mathbb{F}$-predictable time, and we are conditioning with respect to the strict-past stopped σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_{C(s)-}$.

Dual optional and dual predictable projections of measures and non-decreasing processes Let $A(t,\omega)$ be a non-decreasing bounded cadlag process. We define a positive σ-finite measure $\mu^o_A(ds,d\omega)$ on $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+)\otimes\mathcal{F}$ by defining for each bounded measurable integral $X(s,\omega)$ the integral

$$\mu^o_A(X) := \mu_A({}^oX) = E\Big(\int_0^\infty {}^oX(s)A(ds)\Big)$$

Such positive σ-finite measure μ^o corresponds to non-decreasing cadlag processes $A^o(s,\omega)$ which is unique up to indistinguishability such that

$$\mu^o_A(X) = \mu_{A^o}(X) = E\Big(\int_0^\infty X(s)A^o(ds)\Big)$$

The measureμ^o_A is $\mathbb{F}$-optional, since for every bounded measurable process $X(s,\omega)$ by definition

$$\mu^o_A(X) = \mu_A({}^oX) = \mu^o_A({}^oX)$$

Therefore by Theorem 24 the corresponding cadlag non-decreasing process $A^o(s,\omega)$ is $\mathbb{F}$-optional, and it is called the *dual optional projection* of $A(s,\omega)$. For every bounded $\mathbb{F}$-optional integrand process $X(s,\omega)$. we have

$$E\biggl(\int_0^\infty {}^oX(s)A(ds)\biggr) = E\biggl(\int_0^\infty X(s)A^o(ds)\biggr)$$

We repeat the same construction to define the dual $\mathbb{F}$-*predictable projection* : of a non-decreasing bounded cadlag process $A(t,\omega)$. We define a positive σ-finite measure $\mu^p(ds,d\omega)$ on $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+)\otimes\mathcal{F}$ by defining for each bounded measurable integral $X(s,\omega)$ the integral

$$\mu^p_A(X) := \mu_A({}^pX) = E\biggl(\int_0^\infty {}^pX(s)A(ds)\biggr)$$

Such positive σ-finite measure μ^p corresponds to non-decreasing cadlag processes $A^p(s,\omega)$ which is unique up to indistinguishability such that

$$\mu^{(p)}_A(X) = \mu_{A^p}(X) = E\biggl(\int_0^\infty X(s)A^p(ds))$$

The measure μ^p_A is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable, since for every bounded measurable process $X(s,\omega)$ by definition

$$\mu^p_A(X) = \mu_A({}^pX) = \mu^p_A({}^pX)$$

Therefore by Theorem 24 the corresponding cadlag non-decreasing process $A^p(s,\omega)$ is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable, and it is called the *dual predictable projection* of $A(s,\omega)$. For every bounded $\mathbb{F}$-optional integrand process $X(s,\omega)$. we have

$$E\biggl(\int_0^\infty {}^pX(s)A(ds)\biggr) = E\biggl(\int_0^\infty X(s)A^p(ds)\biggr)$$

□

Remark 17. *Note that if A is optional with locally integrable variation, $A = A^o = {}^oA$, but in general if A is not optional $A^o \neq {}^oA$, and if A is predictable $A = A^p = {}^pA = A^o = {}^oA$, but in general $A^p \neq {}^pA$ when A is not predictable!*

Extension by localization The definition of dual optional and dual predictable projections A^o, A^p is extened by localization to *locally integrable* and *prelocally integrable* non-decreasing cadlag processes.

Definition 39. *Consider a non-decreasing cadlag process $A(t,\omega)$ with $A(0) = 0$. We say that*

- *A is integrable if $E(A(\infty)) < \infty$.*
- *locally integrable if there exists a localizing sequence of stopping times $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ P a.s. such that $E(A(\tau_n)) < \infty$ $\forall n$.*
- *prelocally integrable if there exists a localizing sequence of stopping times $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ P a.s. such that $E(A(\tau_n-)) < \infty$ $\forall n$.*

Therefore a locally integrable process is also prelocally integrable, but since it is possible that one can find only localizing sequences such that $E(A(\tau_n-)) < \infty$ and $E(\Delta A(\tau_n)) = \infty$, the opposite implication does not hold.

When A has finite variation, $A(t) = A(0) + A^{\oplus}(t) - A^{\ominus}(t)$ where $A^{\oplus}, A^{\ominus}$ are non-decreasing processes with $A^{\oplus}(0) = A^{\ominus}(0) = 0$, corresponding to singular positive measures. Then the variation of A is the non-decreasing process

$$\mathrm{Var}_A(t) = A^{\oplus}(t) + A^{\ominus}(t) = \int_0^t |A(ds)|$$

We say that A has integrable (locally integrable, prelocally integrable) variation when $\mathrm{Var}_A(t)$ is integrable (locally integrable, prelocally integrable).

The construction of dual optional and dual predictable projections extends directly to non-decreasing cadlag processes $A(t,\omega)$ with integrable variation, $E\big(\mathrm{Var}_A(\infty)\big) < \infty$, since the corresponding Doelans measure μ_A is finite (i.e. has finite positive and negative parts).

When $E\big(\mathrm{Var}_A(\infty)\big) = \infty$, we need a localization argument to show that the Doleans measure μ_A is σ-finite. ... (CONTINUE FROM HERE)

Proposition 27. *1. For a cadlag process $Y(t,\omega)$ with locally integrable variation,*

$$M_t = (Y_t^o - Y_t^p) \tag{7.9}$$

is a $\mathbb{F}$-local martingale.

2. Let $X(t,\omega)$ be a locally bounded measurable process and $Y(t,\omega)$ be cadlag locally integrable variation. We define the pathwise stochastic integrals as

$$(X \cdot Y)_t = \int_0^t X(s,\omega) Y(ds,\omega)$$

which for each ω is a Lebesgue-Stieltjes integral and it is $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+) \otimes \mathcal{F}$-measurable. The stochastic integral $(X \cdot Y)_t$ has also locally integrable variation, and we can define its dual-optional and dual predictable projections.

If $X(s,\omega)$ is a bounded measurable process

$$\big({}^oX \cdot A\big)_t^o = \big({}^oX \cdot A^o\big)_t = \int_0^t {}^oX(s,\omega) A^o(ds,\omega) \tag{7.10}$$

and

$$\big({}^pX \cdot A\big)_t^p = \big(X \cdot A^p\big)_t = \int_0^t {}^pX(s,\omega) A^p(ds,\omega) \tag{7.11}$$

In particular if $X(s,\omega)$ is (locally) bounded and $\mathbb{F}$-predictable, and $M(t,\omega)$ is the local martingale in (7.9), the integral process

$$(X \cdot M)_t = \int_0^t X(s,\omega) M(ds,\omega)$$

is a $\mathbb{F}$-local martingale.

3. *If*

$$E\Big(\int_0^t |X(s)|\big(|Y^o(ds)| + |Y^p(ds)|\Big) < \infty \tag{7.12}$$

then $(X \cdot M)_t$ *is a* $\mathbb{F}$*-martingale.*

Proof. 1. Assume that $E(A(t)) < \infty$ $\forall t$. For $0 \le u \le v$ and $F \in \mathcal{F}_a$, consider the bounded integrand $X(t,\omega) = \mathbf{1}(u < t \le v)\mathbf{1}_F(\omega)$, which is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable since it is left-continuous and $\mathbb{F}$-adapted, therefore $X = {}^pX = {}^oX$. Let $M = A^o - A^p$ which is $\mathbb{F}$-optional and $M(t) \in L^1(P)$ $\forall t$. By definition of dual predictable and dual optional projections

$$E\Big((A^o_v - A^o_u)\mathbf{1}_F\Big)\mu_{A^o}(X) = \mu_A({}^oX) = \mu_A(X) = \mu_A({}^pX) = \mu_{A^p}(X) = E\Big((A^p_v - A^p_u)\mathbf{1}_F\Big)$$

and by linearity

$$E(M_v\mathbf{1}_F) = E\Big((A^o_v - A^p_v)\mathbf{1}_F\Big) = E\Big((A^o_u - A^p_u)\mathbf{1}_F\Big) = E(M_u\mathbf{1}_F) \quad \forall F \in \mathcal{F}_u$$

which is the martingale property. By localization this extends to integrators A with locally integrable variation, giving the local martingale property.

2. Consider now the Lebesgue Stieltjes integral $\big(X\cdot Y\big)_t = \int_0^t X(s,\omega)Y(ds,\omega)$ as a measurable process. Since we assumed that $|X(t,\omega)| \le k < \infty$ P-almost surely $\forall t$,

$$\mathrm{Var}_{(X\cdot Y)}(t) \le k\ \mathrm{Var}_Y(t) < \infty \quad \forall t$$

which means that $(X \cdot Y)_t$ is a process of integrable (or locally integrable depending on the assumption on Y) variation as well and the Lebesgue Stieltjes integral of another bounded measurable process $H(s,\omega)$ is well defined as

$$\begin{aligned}\big(H\cdot(X\cdot Y)\big)_t &= \int_0^t H(s,\omega)\big(X\cdot Y\big)(ds,\omega)\\ &= \int_0^t H(s,\omega)X(s,\omega)Y(ds,\omega) = \big((HX)\cdot Y\big)_t\end{aligned}$$

where the equality between the two lines follows by checking first that it is true for a simple measurable processes of the form

$$H(s,\omega) = \mathbf{1}(u < s \le v)\mathbf{1}_F(\omega), \quad F \in \mathcal{F} \tag{7.13}$$

and using then a monotone class argument.

By using the defining property of the optional and of the dual optional projection and Lemma (33), for all bounded measurable processes $H(s,\omega)$,

$$E\Big(\int_0^\infty {}^oH(s)\ {}^oX(s)\ A(ds)\Big) = E\Big(\int_0^\infty {}^o\big(H\ {}^oX\big)(s)A(ds)\Big) = \\ E\Big(\int_0^\infty H(s)\ {}^oX(s)A^o(ds)\Big)$$

which shows (7.10) By changing optional and dual optional projections with predictable and dual predictable projections we obtain (7.11).

3. Without loss of generality consider the case when $Y(t)$ is $\mathbb{F}$-optional, $Y = {}^oY = Y$, and let $M = Y - Y^p$. Take the localizing sequence

$$\tau_n = \inf\left\{ t : \int_0^t |X(s)|\big(|Y(ds)| + |Y^p(ds)\big) > n \right\}$$

where from the integrability assumption (7.12) it follows that

$$\int_0^t |X(s)|\big(|Y(ds)| + |Y^p(ds)\big) < \infty \quad \forall t \qquad P\text{-almost surely}$$

and therefore $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ P a.s.

□

Definition 40. *1. the right continuous adapted process $(X_t(\omega))$ is in the class D (D is for Doob) is the family of random variables*

$$\left\{ X_\tau(\omega) : \tau \textit{ is a stopping time } \right\}$$

is uniformly integrable.

2. We say that a right continuous $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted process $(X_t(\omega))$ is in the class DL (local Doob) if for each $t > 0$ the family of random variables

$$\left\{ X_\tau(\omega) : \tau \textit{ is a stopping time with } \tau(\omega) \le t \textit{ a.s. } \right\}$$

is uniformly integrable,

Lemma 35. *1. A local martingale M_t of class DL is a true martingale*

2. A local martingale M_t of class D is an uniformly integrable martingale. .

Proof. 1. Let (τ_n) be a localizing sequence. For $0 \le s \le t$, $B \in \mathcal{F}_s$ we have

$$E_P\big((M_t - M_s)\mathbf{1}_B\big) = E_P\big(\lim_{n\to\infty}(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{s\wedge\tau_n})\mathbf{1}_B\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E_P\big((M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{s\wedge\tau_n})\mathbf{1}_B\big) = 0$$

where the last step is justified since the family $\{|M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{s\wedge\tau_n}| : n \in \mathbb{N}\}$ is uniformly integrable by assumption.

2. M_t is a martingale by the previous step, and it is clear that M_t is uniformly integrable since determistic times are stopping times.

□

Theorem 25. *(Doob-Meyer decomposition) Let $\big(X(t) : t \ge 0\big)$ be a cádlág $\mathbb{F}$-submartingale.*

1. a Then

$$X(t) = X(0) + M(t) + A(t)$$

where $M(t)$ is a cádlág local martingale martingale, $A(t)$ is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable, cádlág and non-decreasing, with $M(0) = A(0) = 0$. The Doob-Meyer decomposition is unique up to indistinguishability.

2. *b If $X(t)$ is a cádlág $\mathbb{F}$-submartingale of class (DL), then $M(t)$ in the Doob decomposition is a martingale.*

3. *c If $X(t)$ is a cádlág $\mathbb{F}$-submartingale of class (D), then $M(t)$ in the Doob decomposition is an uniformly integrable martingale.*

Proof. 1. c this is Theorem 16.29 in Bass book.

2. b For every fixed $u \geq 0$, the stopped process $(X(t \wedge u) : t \geq 0)$ is in the class D and the martingale part $(M^{(u)}(t) : t \geq 0)$ in the Doob decomposition is an uniformly integrable martingale which is constant for $t \geq u$. When $v \geq u$ by uniquess of the Doob decomposition $M^{(v)}(t) = M^{(u)}(t)\ \forall t \in [0, u]$, by letting $u \to \infty$ we obtain a martingale M with $M(t) = M^{(u)}(t)\ \forall t, u$ with $0 \leq t \leq u$.

3. a Define a bounded stopping time $\tau_n(\omega) = n \wedge \inf\{t : |X(t)| > n\}$,

   Therefore for every stopping time $0 \leq \sigma(\omega) \leq \tau_n(\omega) \leq n$,

$$|X_\sigma| \leq \sup_{0 \leq t \leq \tau_n} |X_t| \leq \max\{n, |X(\tau_n)|\} \leq n + |X(\tau_n)|$$

   where by Doob optional sampling theorem since $\tau_n \leq n$ $X_{\tau_n} \in L^1(P)$ and $E\big(X_n \big| \mathcal{F}_{\tau_n}\big) \geq X_{\tau_n}$. Therefore for each τ_n the stopped submartingale $\big(X(t \wedge \tau_n) : t \geq 0\big)$ is of class D, it has Doob decomposition where $M(t)$ is a local martingale and $\tau_n \to \infty$ is a localizing sequence. Let

$$V_n(t) = \sum_{i=1}^{n} M_i(t) \qquad \in \mathcal{M}_2$$

   ...

□

Definition 41. *We denote the class of $L^{(2)}$-bounded martingales*

$$\mathcal{M}_2 = \big\{M \text{ martingale with } \parallel M \parallel^2_{\mathcal{M}^2} := \sup_{t \geq 0} E(M(t)^2) = E(M(\infty)^2)\big\}$$

Note that a martingale bounded in L^2 is uniformly integrable. Sometimes in the literature $\mathcal{M}^2$ is referred simply as class of L^2-martingales, this is a bit confusing since

$$\mathcal{M}_2 \subset \mathcal{M}^2 = \big\{M \text{ martingales which are square integrable, i.e. } E\big(M(t)^2\big) < \infty \quad \forall t\big\}\big\}$$

Equipped with the scalar product $(M, N)_{\mathcal{M}_2} := E\big(M_\infty N_\infty\big)$, $\mathcal{M}_2$ becomes an Hilbert space.

We say that two martingales $M, N \in \mathcal{M}_2$ are orthogonal if $E(M(\infty)N(\infty)) = 0$. By Doob martingale inequality

$$E\big(M_\infty^2\big) = \sup_{t \geq 0} E\big(M(t)^2\big) =\leq E\bigg(\sup_{t \geq 0} M(t)^2\big) \leq 4E\big(M_\infty^2\big)$$

$\mathcal{M}_2$ is complete: if $(M^{(n)} : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subset \mathcal{M}_2$ is a Cauchy sequence, $(M^{(n)}(\infty) : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subset L^2(P)$ is a Cauchy sequence. By the completeness of $L^2(P)$ there is a r.v.

$M(\infty)$ such that $E\big((M^{(n)}(\infty) - M(\infty))^2\big) \to 0$, which defines the L^2-bounded martingale $M(t) = E(M(\infty)|\mathcal{F}_t)$ with $\| M^{(n)}(\infty) - M(\infty) \|_{\mathcal{M}_2} \to 0$.

Let

$$\mathcal{M}_2^c = \big\{M \text{ continuous martingale with } E(M(\infty)^2) < \infty\big\} \subset \mathcal{M}_2\big\}$$

$\mathcal{M}_2^c$ is a closed subspace of $\mathcal{M}_2$. If $(M^{(n)}(\infty) : n \in \mathbb{N}) \subset \mathcal{M}_2^c$ and there is $M \in \mathcal{M}_2$ such that $\| M^{(n)}(\infty) - M(\infty) \|_{\mathcal{M}_2} \to 0$, then

$$E\bigg(\sup_{t\geq 0}\big(M^{(n)}(t) - M(t)\big)^2\bigg) \to 0$$

which implies that

$$\bigg(\sup_{t\geq 0}\big|M^{(n)}(t) - M(t)\big|\bigg) \stackrel{P}{\to} 0 \text{ in probability}$$

and there is a subsequence n_k such that

$$\sup_{t\geq 0}\big|M^{(n_k)}(t,\omega) - M(t,\omega)\big|\bigg) \to 0 \; P\text{-almost surely}$$

In particular outside a P-null set on every compact interval $M(t,\omega)$ is the uniform limit of continuous functions, and by the Ascoli-Arzela theorem it is a continuous.

Lemma 36. *Let Z be a cádlág bounded submartingale with Doob decomposition $Z(t) = Z(0)+M(t)+A(t)$, where M is uniformly integrable and A is predictable non-decreasing. Then $E(A(\infty)^q) < \infty \; \forall q > 0$.*

Proof Assume that $|Z(t)| \leq K < \infty \; \forall t$. For $\lambda > 0$ let $\tau = \inf\{t : A(t) \geq \lambda\}$. Note that $A(\tau-) \leq \lambda$. Then

$$P\big(A(\infty) \geq 4K + \lambda\big) = P\big(\{A(\infty) \geq \lambda + 4K\} \cap \{\tau < \infty\}\big) \leq P\big(\{A(\infty) - A(\tau-) \geq 4K\} \cap \{\tau < \infty\}\big) \leq$$

Since τ is predictable, there is an announcing sequence of stopping times $\tau_n \uparrow \tau$ with $\tau_n < \tau$, For fixed $T > 0, n \in \mathbb{N}, \forall j \geq n$

$$E\big((A(\infty) - A(\tau_j))\mathbf{1}(\tau_n < T)\big) = E\big((Z(\infty) - Z(\tau_j))\mathbf{1}(\tau_n < T)\big) \leq 2KP(\tau_n < T)$$

and for $j \to \infty$

$$E\big((A(\infty) - A(\tau-))\mathbf{1}(\tau_n < T)\big) =\big) \leq 2KP(\tau_n < T)$$

and as $n \to \infty$ by monotone convergence

$$E\big((A(\infty) - A(\tau-))\mathbf{1}(\tau < T)\big) =\big) \leq 2KP(\tau < T)$$

where $P(\tau < T) = P(A(\infty) \geq \lambda)$ By combining these inequalities for $\lambda = 4K\ell$,

$$P\big(A(\infty) \geq 4K(\ell+1)\big) \leq \frac{1}{2}P\big(A(\infty) \geq 4K\ell\big) \leq 2^{-\ell}P(A(\infty) \geq 4K) \geq 2^{-\ell}$$

We have by Fubini,

$$E\big(A(\infty)^q\big) = \int_0^\infty P(A(\infty)^q > t)dt = \int_0^\infty P(A(\infty) > t^{1/q})dt = q(4K)^q \int_0^\infty P(A(\infty) > 4K\ell)\ell^{q-1}d\ell \leq$$

Martingale decomposition into purely continuous and purely discontinuous parts For $M \in \mathcal{M}^2$, for each $z \in \mathbb{Z}$ consider the stopping times

$$\tau_{1,z} = \inf\bigl\{t : |\Delta M(t)| \in (2^z, 2^{z+1}]\bigr\}, \dots, \tau_{k,z} = \inf\bigl\{t > \tau_{k-1} : |\Delta M(t)| \in (2^z, 2^{z+1}]\bigr\}, \dots, \quad k \in \mathbb{N}.$$

Each stopping time $\tau_{k,z}$ can be decomposed into a totally unaccessible part, and a countable union of predictable parts. Let denote by $\{S_i : i \in \mathbb{N}\}$ the collection of all such stopping times. Note that $P(S_i = S_j) = 0$ for $i \neq j$. For each S_i let

$$A_i(t) = \mathbf{1}(S_i \le t)\Delta M(S_i)$$

which is a bounded single jump process. In particulat it has has square integrable first variation.

If S_i is a totally unaccessible stopping time,

and consider the square integrable martingale $M_i = A_i - \widetilde{A}_i$ where $\widetilde{A}_i = A_i^p$ is the dual predictable projection of A_i, which is is continuous since S_i is totally unaccessible.

If S_i is predictable,

$$M_i(t) = \mathbf{1}(S_i \le t)\Delta M(S_i)$$

is already a martingale, because for predictable S_i

$$E(\mathbf{1}(S_i \le t)\Delta M_i(S_i)|\mathcal{F}_{S_i-}) = \mathbf{1}(S_i \le t)E(\Delta M_i(S_i)|\mathcal{F}_{S_i-}) = 0$$

and if $H(s)$ is a bounded predictable integral

$$E\biggl(\int_0^\infty H(s)M_i(ds)\biggr) = E\Bigl(\mathbf{1}(S_i < \infty)H(S_i)\Delta M(S_i)\Bigr) = E\Bigl(\mathbf{1}(S_i < \infty)H(S_i)E(\Delta M(S_i)|\mathcal{F}_{S_i-})\Bigr) = 0$$

which means that M_i has zero dual predictable projection.

1. $(M_i : i \in \mathbb{N}) \subset \mathcal{M}^2$
2. $E\bigl(M_i(\infty)M_j(\infty)\bigr) = 0$, $\quad i \neq j$
3. $$\sum_{i=0}^\infty M_i(\infty)$$
   converges in L^2.
4. Let
   $$M^c(t) = M(t) - \sum_{i=0}^\infty M_i(t)$$
   Then $M^c(t)$ is a continuous martingale with $E\bigl(M^c(\infty)M_i(\infty)\bigr) = 0$, and
   $$E(M(t)^2) = E(M^c(t)^2) + \sum_{i=0}^\infty E\bigl(M_i(t)^2\bigr)$$

Proof. For $i \neq j$

$$[M_i, M_j](t) = \sum_{0 \leq s \leq t} \Delta M_i(s) \Delta M_j(s) = \mathbf{1}(S_i = S_j \leq t)\big(\Delta M(S_i)\big)^2 = 0$$

since by construction $P(S_i = S_j) = 0$. We also have that $M_i \in \mathcal{M}_2$, since if the corresponding S_i is predictable, $M_i(t) = \mathbf{1}(S_i \leq t)\Delta M(S_i)$ is bounded. When S_i is not predictable, we can decompose further the jump into positive and negative parts, obtaining the non-decreasing single jump processes

$$\mathbf{1}(S_i \leq t)\big(\Delta M(S_i)\big)^{\pm}$$

which are bounded submartingales, and by Lemma 36 their compensator are bounded in L^2, and the compensated jump difference M_i is an L^2-martingale. □

7.7 Construction of time homogeneous Lévy process

Let $\nu^X(dx)$ be a σ-finite measure on $\mathbb{R}^d$ without atoms, $\nu(\{x\}) = 0 \ \forall x \in \mathbb{R}^d$ such that $\forall \varepsilon > 0$, and let

$$\mu^X(dx, dt)$$

be a random Poisson measure on $\mathbb{R}^d \times \mathbb{R}_+$ driven by $\nu(dx) \times dt$. In other words for $B \in \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^d)$ with $\nu^X(B) < \infty$ and $0 \leq s \leq t$,

$$\mu^X(B, (s,t]) \sim \text{Poisson}\big(\nu^X(B) \times (t-s)\big)$$

and $\mu^X(B, (s,t]) = \infty$ when $\nu^X(B) < \infty$ where $\mu^X(A) \perp\!\!\!\perp \mu^X(A')$ when $A \cap A' = \emptyset$.

We also denote by

$$\widetilde{\mu}^X(dx, dt) = \mu^X(dx, dt) - \nu^X(dx)dt$$

the *compensated Poisson measure* .

We want to make sense of the sum

$$X(t) = \int_0^t \int_{\mathbb{R}^d} x \mu_X(dx, ds) = \sum_{\tau_i \leq t} \xi_i \tag{7.14}$$

where $\{(\xi_i, \tau_i)\}$ are the atoms of the Poisson random measure μ^X, in such a way that $X(t)$ is a cadlag process with jumps $\Delta X(\tau_i) = \xi_i$. Note that when $\nu_X(\mathbb{R}^d) = \infty$, there will be an infinite countable number of atoms in every finite time interval $[0, t]$.

Without any additional assumptions, the sum (7.14) is not well defined.

We assume that

$$\nu(B_\varepsilon^c) < \infty \quad \forall \varepsilon > 0 \tag{7.15}$$

where $B_\varepsilon^c = \{x \in \mathbb{R}^d : |x| > \varepsilon\}$ which implies that

$$\mu^X(B_\varepsilon^c \times [0,t]) \in \mathbb{R}^d \quad \forall t, \varepsilon > 0$$

and

$$\int_0^t \int_{B_\varepsilon^c} x\mu_X(dx, ds) = \sum_{\tau_i \le t} \xi_i \mathbf{1}(|\xi_i| > \varepsilon) < \infty$$

since it is a finite sum.

The problem is then that when ν is not finite, we have $\nu(B_\varepsilon) = +\infty \; \forall \varepsilon > 0$ and we need additional assumptions to sum countably many small jumps.

One possibility is to assume

$$\int_{\mathbb{R}^d} |x| \wedge 1\nu(dx) = \nu(B_1^c) + \int_{B_1} |x|\nu(dx) < \infty \tag{7.16}$$

which implies that

$$X(t) = \int_0^t \int_{\mathbb{R}^d} x \wedge 1\mu_X(dx, ds) = \mu^X(B_1^c, [0,t]) + \sum_{\tau_i \le t} \xi_i \mathbf{1}\big(|\xi_i| \le 1, \tau_i \le t\big)$$

where by monotone convergence the sum on the right hand side is absolutely summable and by monotone convergence $E(|X(t)|) < \infty$ under assumption (7.15).

In this case $X(t)$ is a cadlag process with paths of finite variation on compacts intervals, where

$$\mathrm{Var}(X)_t = \int_0^t |x|\mu_X(dx.ds) < \infty$$

and when ν is an infinite measure it has countably many small jumps, whose sum is absolutely convergent.

By using square integrable martingales we can further relax the integrability condition (7.15).

Namely assume that

$$\int_{\mathbb{R}^d} |x|^2 \wedge 1\nu(dx) = \nu(B_1^c) + \int_{B_1} |x|^2\nu(dx) < \infty \tag{7.17}$$

and consider

$$M_n(t) = \int_{B_1 \setminus B_{1/n}} x\widetilde{\mu}_X(dx, dt) = \int_{\frac{1}{n} < |x| \le 1} x\big(\mu^X(dx, ds) - \nu^X(dx)ds\big)$$

It follows that $M_n(t)$ is a pure-jump square integrable martingale with

$$[M_n, M_n](t) = int_{\frac{1}{n} < |x| \le 1} x^2 \mu^X(dx, ds), \quad \langle M_n, M_n\rangle(t) = t\int_{\frac{1}{n} < |x| \le 1} x^2\nu(dx) < \infty$$

and

$$E\big(M_n(t)^2\big) = E\big(\langle M(n), M(n)\rangle(t)\big) = t\langle M(n), M(n)\rangle(t) \uparrow t\int_{|x| \le 1} x^2\nu(dx) < \infty$$

which means that $\big(M(n)_s : s \le t\big)_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is a Cauchy sequence in the space of L^2-martingales $\mathcal{M}_2$ on the time interval $[0,t]$ which is a complete space, and it converges to a square integrable martingale

$$M_\infty(s) = \int_0^t \int_{B_1} x\widetilde{\mu}(dx,du), \quad s \in [0,t]$$

The time-homogeneous Lévy process $X(t)$ with driving measure $\nu(dx)$ satisying (7.17) is well defined as

$$X(t) = \underbrace{\int_0^t \int_{B_1^c} x\mu^X(dx,dt)\, I}_{} + t\int_{B_1} x\nu(dx) + \int_0^t \int_{B_1} x\widetilde{\mu}(dx,ds)$$

where
I= sum of finitely many large jumps which cannot always be compensated if the jump distribution

Theorem 26. *(Lévy Kintchine) Let $\nu(dx)$ be a σ-finite positive measure on $\mathbb{R}^d$, such that*

$$\int_{\mathbb{R}^d} |x|^2 \wedge 1\nu(dx) < \infty$$

$b \in \mathbb{R}^d$ and Σ a $d\times d$ positive definite matrix. There exists a cadlag process $X(t,\omega) \in \mathbb{R}^d$ with independent stationary increments, with $X(0) = 0$, such that for $0 \le s \le t$ $(X(t) - X(s)) \perp\!\!\!\perp \mathcal{F}_s$ and $X(t) - X(s) \overset{law}{=} X(t-s)$ with characteristic function

$$E\big(\exp\big(iu\cdot X(t)\big) = \exp\bigg(iu\cdot b - \frac{u\Sigma u^\top}{2} + \int_{\mathbb{R}^d\setminus\{0\}} \big(\exp(iu\cdot x) - 1 - iu\cdot x\mathbf{1}(|x|\le 1)\big)\nu(dx)$$

This is sometimes formulated by means of some other truncation function $h(x)$ such that $h : \mathbb{R}^d \to \mathbb{R}^d$ is bounded and $h(x) = x$ in a neighbourhood of zero.

$$E\big(\exp\big(iu\cdot X(t)\big) = \exp\bigg(iu\cdot b' - \frac{u\Sigma u^\top}{2} + \int_{\mathbb{R}^d\setminus\{0\}} \big(\exp(iu\cdot x) - 1 - iu\cdot h(x)\big)\nu(dx)$$

and

$$b' = b + \int_{\mathbb{R}^d} \big\{x\mathbf{1}(|x|\le 1) - h(x)\big\}\nu(dx)$$

Consider the compensated Poisson random measure

$$\widetilde{\mu}^X(dx,dt) = mu^X(dx,dt) - \nu(dx)dt$$

Let

$$X_z(t) = \int_0^t \int_{2^{z+1}\le|x|>2^z} x\mu^X(dx,dt), \quad z\in\mathbb{Z}$$

and the compensated process

$$\widetilde{X}_z(t) = \int_0^t \int_{2^{z+1}\le|x|>2^z} x\widetilde{\mu}^X(dx,dt), \quad z\in\mathbb{Z}$$

Each X_z $z \in \mathbb{Z}$ is a compound Poisson process with finitely meany jumps on compact intervals with intensity $\nu(\mathbb{R}^d \setminus B_1)$ and the jumps have probability distribution

$$\frac{\mathbf{1}(2^{z+1} \leq |x| > 2^z)}{\nu(B_{2^{z+1}} \setminus B_{2^z})}\nu(dx)$$

It follows that

$$E\big(\exp(iu \cdot X_z(t))\big) = \exp\Big(\int_{B_{2^{z+1}} \setminus B_{2^z}} \big(\exp(iu \cdot x) - 1\big)\nu(dx)\Big)$$

and

$$E\big(\exp(iu \cdot X_z(t))\big) = \exp\Big(\int_{B_{2^{z+1}} \setminus B_{2^z}} \big(\exp(iu \cdot x) - 1 - iu \cdot x\big)\nu(dx)\Big)$$

Moreover $[X_z, X_{z'}]_t = [\widetilde{X}_z, \widetilde{X}_{z'}]_t = 0$ when $z \neq z'$, and each $\widetilde{X}_z(t)$ is a martingale bounded in L^2. with

$$E\big(\widetilde{X}_z(t)^2\big) = \int_{B_{2^{z+1}} \setminus B_{2^z}} x^2 \nu(dx) < \infty$$

and $E\big(\widetilde{X}_z(t)\widetilde{X}_{z'}(t)\big) = 0$ for $z \neq z^{'}$ Consider now

$$M_n(t) = \sum_{z=-1}^{-n} \widetilde{X}_z(t) = \int_0^t \int_{1 \leq |x| > 2^{-n}} x\widetilde{\mu}^X(dx, ds)$$

with

$$E(M_n(t)^2) = \sum_{z=-1}^{-n} E\big(\widetilde{X}_z(t)^2\big) = t\int_{1 \leq |x| > 2^{-n}} x^2\nu(dx) \uparrow t\int_{\{|x| \leq 1\}} |x|^2 \wedge 1\ \nu(dx) < \infty$$

which shows that $\{M_n(t)^2\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is a Cauchy sequence in the complete space and therefore it has an L^2 limit $M(t)$.

and

$$\int_{\mathbb{R}^2} |x|^2 \wedge 1\nu(dx) < \infty$$

Chapter 8

Ito calculus

8.1 Ito-isometry and stochastic integral

Proposition 28. *Let $\mathcal{M}^2$ be the space of continuous $\mathbb{F}$-martingales $(M_t(\omega))_{t\geq 0}$ which are bounded in $L^2(\Omega)$, with norm*

$$\| M \|_{\mathcal{M}^2}^2 := E_P\big(M_\infty^2\big) = E_P\big(\langle M \rangle_\infty\big)$$

$\mathcal{M}^2$ is complete and it is an Hilbert space with scalar product

$$(M,N)_{\mathcal{M}^2} := E_P\big(M_\infty N_\infty\big) = E_P\big(\langle M, N \rangle_\infty\big)$$

By Doob's L^p martingale inequality

$$E_P\left(\sup_{t\geq 0} M_t^2\right)^{1/2} \leq 2 \| M \|_{\mathcal{M}^2}$$

Proof When

$$\sup_{t\geq 0} E_P(M_t^2) < \infty$$

by lemma (29) $M_t \to M_\infty$ P-almost surely and in $L^2(P)$.

We show that $\mathcal{M}^2$ is complete.

If $(M^{(n)})_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is a Cauchy sequence in $\mathcal{M}^2$, then $(M_\infty^{(n)})_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ is a Cauchy sequence in the complete space $L^2(\Omega)$, and there is $M_\infty \in L^2(\Omega)$ such that $E_P\big((M_\infty^{(n)} - M_\infty)^2\big) \to 0$.

Define $M_t(\omega) := E_P(M_\infty|\mathcal{F}_t)(\omega)$, it follows that $M^{(n)} \to M \in \mathcal{M}^2$, equivalently

$$E_P\left(\sup_{t\geq 0}(M_t - M_t^{(n)})^2\right) \to 0$$

In particular there is a subsequence (n_j) such that for P-almost all ω

$$\sup_{t\geq 0}\big|M_t^{(n_j)}(\omega) - M_t(\omega)\big| \to 0$$

which implies that P-almost surely the path $t \mapsto M_t(\omega)$ is continuous □

Definition 42. *We say that the process $Y(s,\omega)$ is a simple predictable with respect to the filtration $\mathbb{F}=(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t\geq 0}$, if it is adapted and left-continuous taking finitely many random values, that is*

$$Y_s(\omega) := \sum_{i=1}^{n} \mathbf{1}_{(a_i,b_i]}(s)\eta_i(\omega), \quad n \in \mathbb{N} \tag{8.1}$$

with $0 \leq a_1 < b_1 \leq a_2 < b_2 \leq \dots < b_{n-1} \leq a_n < b_n < \infty$ and $\eta_i(\omega)$ is $\mathcal{F}_{a_i}$-measurable.

Definition 43. *Given the filtration $\mathbb{F}=(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t\in\mathbb{R}}$, consider the measurable space $\Omega\times\mathbb{R}^+$ equipped with the predictable σ-algebra $\mathcal{P}$ generated by the left continuous $\mathbb{F}$-adapted processes.*

Exercise: the simple left-continuous $\mathbb{F}$-adapted processes generate also $\mathcal{P}$.

When $(\omega,t)\mapsto Y_t(\omega)$ is $\mathcal{P}$-measurable, we say that the process Y is $\mathbb{F}$-predictable.

Lemma 37. *Let $(M_t)\in\mathcal{M}^2$ a continuous martingale, and $Y_t\in\mathcal{S}$ a bounded simple predictable process with representation 8.1. We define the Ito integral as*

$$(Y\cdot M)_t := \int_0^t Y_s dM_s := \sum_{i=1}^{n} \eta_i (M_{b_i\wedge t} - M_{a_i\wedge t})$$

For $Y\in\mathcal{S}$, the map $Y\mapsto\int_0^\infty Y_s dM_s$ is an isometry between $L^2_a\big(\Omega\times\mathbb{R}^+, P(d\omega)\otimes\langle M\rangle(\omega,dt)\big)$ and $\mathcal{M}^2$, with

$$E_P\left(\left\{\int_0^\infty Y_s dM_s\right\}^2\right) = E_P\left(\int_0^\infty Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\right) \tag{8.2}$$

We have the property: for all $(N_t)\in\mathcal{M}^2$,

$$\langle (Y\cdot M), N\rangle_t := \int_0^t Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s := \sum_{i=1}^{n} \eta_i\big(\langle M,N\rangle_{b_i\wedge t} - \langle M,N\rangle_{a_i\wedge t}\big)$$

Proof Let $Y(\omega,u)=\mathbf{1}_{(a,b]}(u)\eta(\omega)$ with $a<b$ and $\eta(\omega)$ bounded and $\mathcal{F}_a$ measurable. We have

$$\begin{aligned}
&E_P\left(\int_0^t Y_s dM_s \middle| \mathcal{F}_s\right) = E_P\big(\eta(M_b-M_a)\big|\mathcal{F}_t\big)\\
&= \begin{cases} \eta(M_b-M_a) & t\geq b\\ \eta(M_t-M_a) & a\leq t\leq b\\ E_P(\eta E_P(M_t-M_a|\mathcal{F}_a)|\mathcal{F}_t)=0 & t\leq a \end{cases}\\
&= \eta(M_{t\wedge b}-M_{t\wedge a})
\end{aligned}$$

By taking conditional expectation and using the martingale property

$$E_P\left(\left\{\int_0^\infty Y_u dM_u\right\}^2\right) =$$

$$\sum_{i=1}^n E_P\left(\eta_i^2 (M_{b_i} - M_{a_i})^2\right) + 2\sum_{i=1}^n \sum_{1\le j<i} E_P\left(\eta_i\eta_j (M_{b_i} - M_{a_i})(M_{b_j} - M_{a_j})\right) =$$

$$\sum_{i=1}^n E_P\left(\eta_i^2 E_P\big((M_{b_i} - M_{a_i})^2 | \mathcal{F}_{a_i}\big)\right) + 2\sum_{i=1}^n \sum_{1\le j<i} E_P\left(\eta_i\eta_j (M_{b_j} - M_{a_j}) E_P\big(M_{b_i} - M_{a_i} | \mathcal{F}_{a_i}\big)\right) =$$

$$\sum_{i=1}^n E_P\left(\eta_i^2 \big(\langle M\rangle_{b_i} - \langle M\rangle_{a_i}\big)\right) = E_P\left(\int_0^\infty Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\right)$$

where the cross terms have zero expectation. To show (8.2), note that for $s \le t$,

$$\int_s^t Y_u dM_u = \int_0^t Y_u dM_u - \int_0^s Y_u dM_u = \eta\big(M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s}\big),$$

and for $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$

$$E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A\left(\int_s^t Y_u dM_u\right)(N_t - N_s)\right) = E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta (M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s})(N_t - N_s)\right) =$$

$$E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta (M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s})(N_t - N_{b\wedge t})\right) + E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta (M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s})(N_{b\wedge t} - N_{a\vee s})\right)$$

$$+ E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta (M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s})(N_{a\vee s} - N_s)\right) =$$

$$E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta (M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s}) E_P\left((N_t - N_{b\wedge t})\middle| \mathcal{F}_{b\wedge t}\right)\right) + E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta E_P\left(M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s})(N_{b\wedge t} - N_{a\vee s})\middle| \mathcal{F}_{a\vee s}\right)\right)$$

$$+ E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta E_P\left(M_{b\wedge t} - M_{a\vee s}\middle| \mathcal{F}_{a\vee s}\right)(N_{a\vee s} - N_s)\right)$$

$$= E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \eta \big(\langle M, N\rangle_{b\wedge t} - \langle M, N\rangle_{a\vee s}\big)\right) = E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \int_s^t Y_u d\langle M, N\rangle_u\right),$$

where we use the martingale properties of N, M and $(M^2 - \langle M\rangle)$ between times $s \le (a\vee s) \le (b\wedge t) \le t$. This shows that

$$N_t \int_0^t Y_u dM_u - \int_0^t Y_u d\langle M, N\rangle_u$$

is a $\mathbb{F}$-martingale which proves (8.2).

Theorem 27. *(Kunita-Watanabe inequality) Let $(N_t), (M_t) \in \mathcal{M}^2$ and $(Y_s), (U_s)$ jointly measurable processes (not necessarily $\mathbb{F}$-adapted !).*

Then, P-almost surely for $t \in [0, +\infty]$,

$$\int_0^t |Y_s U_s| \, d|\langle M, N\rangle|_s \le \left(\int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\right)^{1/2} \left(\int_0^t U_s^2 d\langle N\rangle_s\right)^{1/2}$$

By Hölder inequality, we have also for $p, q > 1,\ p^{-1} + q^{-1} = 1$

$$E_P\left(\int_0^t |Y_s U_s| \, d|\langle M, N\rangle|_s\right) \le E_P\left(\left\{\int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\right\}^{p/2}\right)^{1/p} E_P\left(\left\{\int_0^t U_s^2 d\langle N\rangle_s\right\}^{q/2}\right)^{1/q}$$

Note that we need joint measurability since we want that the maps $t \mapsto Y(t,\omega)$ $t \mapsto U(t,\omega)$ are $\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+)$-measurable for all $\omega \in \Omega$, in order to use the Lebesgue-Stieltjes integral. The integral on the left hand side is a Lebesgue-Stieljes integral taken ω-wise with respect to the total variation of the process $\langle M,N\rangle_t(\omega)$

Proof Note that P-almost surely $\forall r \in \mathbb{R}$ $(M_t + rN_t) \in \mathcal{M}^2$ and

$$0 \le [M+rN]_t = [M]_t + r^2[N]_t + 2r[N,M]_t \iff$$
$$0 \le \langle M+rN\rangle_t = \langle M\rangle_t + r^2\langle N\rangle_t + 2r\langle N,M\rangle_t$$

By continuity, this holds simultaneously for all $r \in \mathbb{R}$ outside a P-null set.

The corresponding quadratic equation in the unknown r has at most one real solution, and the inequality for the discriminant follows:

$$\langle N,M\rangle_t^2 - \langle M\rangle_t\langle N\rangle_t \le 0 \iff \big|\langle N,M\rangle_t\big| \le \sqrt{\langle M\rangle_t}\sqrt{\langle N\rangle_t}$$

The same inequality holds for increments:

$$\big|\langle N,M\rangle_t - \langle N,M\rangle_s\big| \le \sqrt{\langle M\rangle_t - \langle M\rangle_s}\sqrt{\langle N\rangle_t - \langle M\rangle_s}$$

By changing the sign of the integrands opportunely, we obtain

$$Y'_s = |Y_s|, \quad U'_s = |U_s|\frac{d|\langle M,N\rangle|}{d\langle M,N\rangle}(s)$$

where the last term on the right hand side is the Radon-Nikodym derivative of $\langle M,N\rangle$ with respect to its total variation, and it is enough to show that

$$\left|\int_0^t Y_s U_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s\right| \le \left(\int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\right)^{1/2}\left(\int_0^t U_s^2 d\langle N\rangle_s\right)^{1/2}$$

Assume that U_t and Y_t are simple measurable processess, such that there is a finite partition of $[0,t] = \bigcup_{j=1}^n B_j$ into disjoint Borel sets, and random variables $\widetilde{Y}_j(\omega), \widetilde{U}_j(\omega)$ such that

$$Y_s(\omega) = \sum_{j=1}^n \widetilde{Y}_j(\omega)\mathbf{1}(s \in B_j), \quad U_s(\omega) = \sum_{j=1}^n \widetilde{U}_j(\omega)\mathbf{1}(s \in B_j)$$

Denote

$$\Delta V_j = \int_{B_j} dV_s$$

where $V_s = \langle M,N\rangle_s, \langle M\rangle_s, \langle N\rangle_s$, have paths of finite total variation.

Note that if $B \subseteq \mathbb{R}^+$ is a Borel set and μ is a positive measure on $(\mathbb{R}^+, \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+))$

$$\mu(B) = \sup_{\text{closed } C\subseteq B} \mu(C) = \inf_{\text{open } O\supseteq B} \mu(O)$$

and the same equality holds when we take supremum over C union of finitely many closed intervals and infimum over O union of finitely many open intervals. Therefore

$$\Delta|\langle M,N\rangle|_j = |\langle M,N\rangle|(B_j) = \sup_{C\subseteq B_j}\Big\{|\langle M,N\rangle|(C)\Big\} \le \sup_{C\subseteq B_j}\Big\{\sqrt{\langle M\rangle(C)}\sqrt{\langle N\rangle(C)}\Big\}$$

$$\le \sqrt{\sup_{C\subseteq B_j}\langle M\rangle(C)}\sqrt{\sup_{C'\subseteq B_j}\langle N\rangle(C')} = \sqrt{\langle M\rangle(B_j)}\sqrt{\langle N\rangle(B_j)}$$

where we used the same notation for the non-decreasing functions and the corresponding measures. We have

$$\left|\int_0^t Y_s U_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s\right| = \left|\sum_{j=0}^n \widetilde{Y}_j\widetilde{U}_j\Delta\langle M,N\rangle_j\right| \le \sum_{i=0}^n |\widetilde{Y}_j\widetilde{U}_j|\sqrt{\Delta\langle M\rangle_j}\sqrt{\Delta\langle N\rangle_j}$$

$$\le \left(\sum_{j=0}^n \widetilde{Y}_j^2\Delta\langle M\rangle_j\right)^{1/2}\left(\sum_{j=0}^n \widetilde{U}_j^2\Delta\langle N\rangle_j\right)^{1/2} = \left(\int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\right)^{1/2}\left(\int_0^t U_s^2 d\langle N\rangle_s\right)^{1/2}$$

where we used the Cauchy Schwartz inequality for sums.

The result follows for jointly measurable integrands by the monotone convergence theorem for the Lebesgue-Stieltjes integrals splitting first the integrands into positive and negative parts, and approximating from below by simple $\mathcal{F}\otimes\mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^+)$-measurable processes □

Remark 18. *The integrands $Y_s(\omega), U_s(\omega)$ were not assumed to be $\mathbb{F}$-adapted, just jointly measurable.*

Lemma 38. *(martingale characterization) An $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted process (M_t) is a martingale if and only for all* **bounded** *$(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping times τ, the random variable $M_\tau(\omega)\in L^1(P)$ and*

$$E_P\big(M_\tau\big) = E_P(M_0) \tag{8.3}$$

and (M_t) is an uniformly integrable martingale if and only if 8.3 holds for all stopping times τ. **Proof** The necessity follows from Doob's optional stopping theorem.

Sufficiency: let $s\le t$ and $A\in\mathcal{F}_s$. Define the random time

$$\tau(\omega) := s\,\mathbf{1}_A(\omega) + t\,\mathbf{1}_{A^c}(\omega)$$

Note that $\forall u\ge 0$

$$\{\tau(\omega)\le u\} = \begin{cases}\Omega & t\le u\\ A & s<u\le t\\ \emptyset & 0\le s\le u\end{cases}$$

which is $\mathcal{F}_u$ measurable in all cases, therefore τ is a bounded stopping time.

$$E_P(M_0) = E_P\big(M_\tau\big) = E_P(\mathbf{1}_A M_s + \mathbf{1}_{A^c}M_t) = \tag{8.4}$$

$$E_P\big(M_t\big) + E_P\big(\mathbf{1}_A(M_s-M_t)\big) = E_P\big(\big(M_0\big) - E_P\big(\mathbf{1}_A(M_t-M_s)\big) \tag{8.5}$$

$$\Longrightarrow E_P\big(\mathbf{1}_A(M_t-M_s)\big) = 0 \tag{8.6}$$

which gives the martingale property. When 8.3 holds for all stopping times then M_∞ exits and we can take $t=\infty$ in (8.4).

Definition 44. *On a probability space* $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$*, a stochastic process* $(Y(s,\omega) : s \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ *is jointly measurable when*

- $\forall s$ *the map* $\omega \mapsto Y(s,\omega)$ *is* $\mathcal{F}$*-measurable*
- $\forall \omega$ *the map* $s \mapsto Y(s,\omega)$ *is Borel measurable*

We say that $Y(s,\omega)$ *is progressively measurable w.r.t. the filtration* $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_s)$*, when* $\forall t \geq 0$ *the restricion*

$$Y : [0,t] \times \Omega \mapsto \mathbb{R}^d$$

is $\mathcal{B}([0,t]) \otimes \mathcal{F}_t$*-jointly measurable.*

Theorem 28. *(Ito integral, from the Revuz and Yor's book) Let* $(M_t) \in \mathcal{M}^2$ *and* $Y(s,\omega)$ *a progressively measurable process with*

$$E_P\biggl(\int_0^\infty Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\biggr) < \infty \tag{8.7}$$

1. *There exists an unique martingale in* $\mathcal{M}^2$ *which will be denoted by*

$$(Y \cdot M)_t = \int_0^t Y_s dM_s$$

such that $\forall\ (N_t) \in \mathcal{M}^2$,

$$E_P\biggl((Y \cdot M)_\infty N_\infty\biggr) = E_P\biggl(\int_0^\infty Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s\biggr) = E_P\biggl(\langle Y \cdot M, N\rangle_\infty\biggr) \tag{8.8}$$

2. $(Y \cdot M)_0 = 0$ *and for all* $(N_t) \in \mathcal{M}^2$

$$(Y \cdot M)_t N_t - \int_0^t Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s,$$

is a true martingale, in particular

$$\biggl\langle (Y \cdot M), N \biggr\rangle_t = \int_0^t Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s$$

and for $N = (Y \cdot M)$

$$\langle Y \cdot M\rangle_t = \int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M,M\rangle_s \quad \forall t \in [0,+\infty]. \tag{8.9}$$

3. *By uniqueness it follows that for simple predictable integrands this definition of Ito integral coincides with the Riemann sums definition given in (37).*

Proof: The map

$$N_\infty \mapsto \varphi(N) := E_P\Big(\int_0^\infty Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s\Big)$$

is linear since the predictable covaration is P-almost surely bilinear. It is also continuous in $\mathcal{M}^2$ norm: by Kunita-Watanabe and Cauchy-Schwartz inequalities

$$|\varphi(N)| = \Big|E_P\Big(\int_0^\infty Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s\Big)\Big| \le E_P\Big(\int_0^\infty Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\Big)^{1/2} E_P\Big(\langle N\rangle_\infty\Big)^{1/2} =$$
$$E_P\Big(\int_0^\infty Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\Big)^{1/2} \parallel N \parallel_{\mathcal{M}^2}$$

When

$$E_P\Big(\int_0^\infty Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\Big) < \infty$$

by the Riesz representation theorem in the Hilbert space $\mathcal{M}^2$ there exists an unique continuous martingale in $\mathcal{M}^2$, which we denote as $\{(Y\cdot M)_t\}$, such that

$$E_P\Big(\int_0^\infty Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s\Big) = \varphi(N) = \big((Y\cdot M),N\big)_{\mathcal{M}^2} =$$
$$E_P\Big((Y\cdot M)_\infty N_\infty\Big) = E_P\Big(\langle Y\cdot M,N\rangle_\infty\Big)$$

Note: up to now we did not need predictability or progressive measurability of (Y_s), in Kunita Watanabe inequality joint measurability was enough.

The progressive measurability of Y_s will be needed in to show that

$$X_t := N_t \int_0^t Y_s dM_s - \int_0^t Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s$$

is a martingale for all $N\in\mathcal{M}^2$ which means, by definition of predictable covariation,

$$\big\langle (Y\cdot M),N\big\rangle_t = \int_0^t Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s.$$

By taking first $N=M$, we obtain

$$\int_0^t Y(s)d\langle M,M\rangle_s = \langle M, Y\cdot M\rangle_t$$

and for $N_t=(Y\cdot M)_t$ we have also (8.9)

$$\langle Y\cdot M, Y\cdot M\rangle_t = \int_0^t Y_s d\langle M, Y\cdot M\rangle_s = \int_0^t Y_s d(Y\cdot\langle M,M\rangle)_s = \int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M,M\rangle_s\ .$$

Let τ be a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping time (since we work in the space $\mathcal{M}_2$ of martingales bounded in $L^2(P)$ we don't need to assume that τ is bounded).

Since $N, (Y \cdot M) \in \mathcal{M}_2$, by Fatou lemma and monotone convergence

$$E(N_\tau^2) \le \liminf_n E(N_{\tau\wedge n}^2) = \lim_n E(\langle N_{\tau\wedge n}\rangle) =$$
$$E(\langle N\rangle_\tau) \le E(\langle N\rangle_\infty) = E(N_\infty^2) = \| N \|_{\mathcal{M}_2}^2 < \infty \ ,$$

and similarly $E\big((Y\cdot M)_\tau\big) \le \| (Y\cdot M) \|_{\mathcal{M}_2}^2 < \infty$. By Cauchy Schwartz and Kunita Watanabe inequalities it follows that $X_\tau \in L^1(P)$.

The martingales $(Y\cdot M)_t$ and (N_t) are uniformly integrable martingales (since they are bounded in $L^2(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$), we write

$$E_P\big((Y\cdot M)_\tau N_\tau\big) = E_P\Big(E_P\big((Y\cdot M)_\infty|\mathcal{F}_\tau\big)N_\tau\Big) = E_P\Big((Y\cdot M)_\infty N_\tau\Big) =$$
$$E_P\Big((Y\cdot M)_\infty N_\infty^\tau\Big) = E_P\Big(\langle (Y\cdot M), N^\tau\rangle_\infty\Big) = \text{ by the defining property (8.10)}$$
$$= E_P\Big(\int_0^\infty Y_s d\langle M, N^\tau\rangle_s\Big) = E_P\Big(\int_0^\tau Y_s d\langle M, N^\tau\rangle_s\Big)$$

and by the martingale characterization lemma 38

$$X_t = (Y\cdot M)_t N_t - \int_0^t Y_s d\langle M, N\rangle_s$$

is a true martingale when it is $\mathbb{F}$-adapted, which is the case when $Y_s(\omega)$ is progressively measurable. To show that $(Y\cdot M)_0 = 0$, take a constant martingale $N_t \equiv N_0 \in L^2(\Omega,\mathcal{F}_0,P)$. By Kunita-Watanabe inequality

$$|\langle M,N\rangle_t| \le \sqrt{\langle M\rangle_t}\sqrt{\langle N\rangle_t} = 0$$

since $[N,N]_t = \langle N,N\rangle_t = 0$. Then

$$0 = E_P\Big(\int_0^t Y_s d\langle M,N\rangle_s\Big) = E_P\Big((Y\cdot M)_t N_t\Big) =$$
$$E_P\Big((Y\cdot M)_t N_0\Big) = E_P\Big((Y\cdot M)_0 N_0\Big)$$

which implies $(Y\cdot M)_0 = 0$ since $N_0 \in L^2(\Omega,\mathcal{F}_0,P)$ is arbitrary.

Remark 19. *P-almost sure path continuity $t \mapsto (Y\cdot M)_t$ follows directly from the definition of $\mathcal{M}_2$ without additional work.*

This proof is a bit abstract since we used Riesz representation theorem. A more standard proof for predictable integrands consists in approximating the integrand Y_s by a sequence $(Y_s^{(n)})$ of simple predictable (left-continuous and adapted) integrands in the space $L^2\big(\Omega\times\mathbb{R}^+,\mathcal{P},P(d\omega)\langle M\rangle(dt,\omega)\big)$ obtaining by Ito isometry a Cauchy sequence of Ito integrals in $\mathcal{M}^2$.

A constructive extension of this line of proof to progressively measurable integrands for which the Lebesgue-Stieltjes integral $\int_0^t Y_s d\langle M\rangle_s$ is not necessarily well defined as a Riemann-Stieltjes integral, is a bit technical, since one needs an intermediate approximation step in order to work with Riemann sums (see for example the details in Karatzas and Schreve book Brownian motion and stochastic calculus).

Remark 20. *The Ito map* $(Y, M) \mapsto (Y \cdot M) \in \mathcal{M}_2$ *is bilinear.*

Remark 21. *When* $H(s,\omega)$ *is just jointly measurable but not* $\mathbb{F}$*-adapted, under the integrability assumption 8.7, there is a square integrable martingale* $\int_0^t H_s dM_s$ *such that* $\forall N \in \mathcal{M}_s$

$$E\biggl(\Bigl\langle \int_0^{\cdot} H_s dM_s, N\Bigr\rangle_t\biggr) = E\biggl(\int_0^t H_s d\langle M, N\rangle_s\biggr)$$

There is a progressively measurable process ${}^oH(s,\omega)$*, such that* ${}^oH(s) = E(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s), \forall s$ *which is called* $\mathbb{F}$*-optional projection or* $\mathbb{F}$*-optional trace such that*

$$E\biggl(\int_0^t H_s d\langle M, N\rangle_s\biggr) = E\biggl(\int_0^t {}^oH_s d\langle M, N\rangle_s\biggr),$$

$$\int_0^t H_s dM_s = \int_0^t {}^oH_s dM_s = \int_0^t E(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s) dM_s,$$

$$\Bigl\langle \int_0^{\cdot} H_s dM_s, N\Bigr\rangle_t = \Bigl\langle \int_0^{\cdot} {}^oH_s dM_s, N\Bigr\rangle_t =$$

$$= \int_0^t {}^oH_s d\langle M, N\rangle_s = \int_0^t E(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s) d\langle M, N\rangle_s.$$

Lemma 39. *Under the assumption of Theorem (28), If* τ *is a stopping time, the stochastic integral with respect to the stopped martingale* $M_t^\tau = M_{t\wedge\tau}$ *satisfies*

$$(Y \cdot M^\tau)_t = \int_0^t Y_s dM_s^\tau = \int_0^t Y_s \mathbf{1}(\tau > s) dM_s =$$

$$(Y \cdot M)_t^\tau = (Y \cdot M)_{t\wedge\tau} = \int_0^{t\wedge\tau} Y_s dM_s$$

Proof. For $N \in \mathcal{M}_2$, since $\langle M, N^\tau\rangle_t = \langle M, N\rangle_{t\wedge\tau}$

$$E\biggl(\int_0^\infty Y_s d\langle M, N^\tau\rangle_s\biggr) = E\biggl(\int_0^\infty Y_s \mathbf{1}(\tau > s) d\langle M, N\rangle_s\biggr)$$

implies by the uniqueness of the Riesz representation that

$$\int_0^\infty Y_s dM_s^\tau = \int_0^\infty Y_s \mathbf{1}(\tau > s) dM_s = \int_0^\tau Y_s dM_s$$

Proposition 29. *(Extension by localization)*

Let (M_t) *a continuous local martingale and* $(Y_t(\omega))$ *a progressively measurable process such that* $\forall t \geq 0$

$$P\biggl(\int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s < \infty\biggr) = 1$$

Then there is a local martingale which we denote by $(Y \cdot M)_t = \int_0^t Y_s dM_s$ *such that* $(Y \cdot M)_0 = 0$ *and*

$$\langle (Y \cdot M), N\rangle_t = \int_0^\infty Y_s d\langle M, N\rangle_s \qquad (8.10)$$

for every continuous local martingale N.

Proof Let (τ_n') a localizing sequence for M_t. Define the sequence of stopping times

$$\tau_n'' := \inf\left\{ t \geq 0 : \int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s \geq n \right\}, \quad n \in \mathbb{N}$$

and $\tau_n = (\tau_n' \wedge \tau_n'')$. We see that $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$ P a.s.

With this localization, for each n Y_t and the stopped process $M_t^{\tau_N}$ satisfy the assumptions of Theorem (28) and the Ito integral $(Y \cdot M^{\tau_n}) \in \mathcal{M}_2$ exists.

Note that $\forall 0 \leq k \leq n$ by lemma (39)

$$\int_0^t Y_s \mathbf{1}(\tau_k > s) dM_s^{\tau_k} = \int_0^t Y_s \mathbf{1}(\tau_k > s) dM_s^{\tau_n}$$

as elements of $\mathcal{M}_2$.

The sets $\Omega_k = \{\omega : \tau_{k-1}(\omega) \leq t < \tau_k(\omega)\}$ form a measurable partition of Ω.

Define

$$\int_0^t Y_s dM_s = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left(\int_0^t Y_s dM_t^{\tau_n} - \int_0^t Y_s dM_t^{\tau(n-1)} \right) = \lim_{n\to\infty} \int_0^t Y_s dM_s^{\tau_n}$$

where for fixed t, P almost surely $\tau_n(\omega) \uparrow \infty$, and the telescopic sum contains only finitely many non-zero terms,

We see that P a.s. the trajectory $t \mapsto \int_0^t Y_s dM_s$ is continuous, and $\int_0^t Y_s dM_s$ is a local martingale with localizing sequence (τ_n) □

Remark 22. *It is not true that a local martingale bounded in* L^2 *is a true martingale, here a counterexample:*

Let $B_t = (B_t^{(1)}, B_t^{(2)}, B_t^{(3)})$ *a 3-dimensional brownian motion starting from* 0 *at time* 0 *, with independent components, so that* $\langle B^{(i)}, B^{(j)}\rangle_t = \delta_{ij}$.

The process

$$R_t = |B_t| = \sqrt{\sum_{i=1}^{3} \big(B_s^{(i)}\big)^2}$$

is called the 3*-dimensional Bessel process.*

Let $M_t = R_t^{-1}$ *for* $t \geq 1$. *We start the process at time* 1 *since* $R_0 = 0$. $(M_t)_{t\geq 1}$ *is a local martingale which is bounded in* $L^2(P)$ *but it is* **not** *a true martingale (exercise).*

However we can always characterize the continuous local martingales which are square integrable true martingales. Recall that the predictable variation $\langle M\rangle_t$ is defined for a continuous local martingale M_t by using localization and the Doob decomposition of the local submartingale M_t^2.

Proposition 30. *A continuous local martingale* M_t *with* $M_0 = 0$ *is a square integrable true martingale if and only if*

$$E_P\big(\langle M\rangle_t\big) < \infty, \quad \forall t \in \mathbb{R}^+ .$$

Proof ($\Longrightarrow$) For true square integrable martingales, the isometry

$$E(M_t^2) = E(\langle M \rangle_t)$$

follows from the Doob decomposition of the submartingale M_t^2.

($\Longleftarrow$) Let $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$ be a localizing sequence of stopping times for M, such that the localized process $(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \geq 0)$ is bounded P a.s. For fixed $t \geq 0$ consider the discrete time filtration $(\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \in \mathbb{N})$. It follows by Doob optional sampling theorem that $(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} : n \in \mathbb{N})$ is discrete time martingale in the filtration $(\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \in \mathbb{N})$, which is bounded in $L^2(P)$, since $\forall n \in \mathbb{N}$

$$E\big(M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n}\big) = E\big(\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n}\big) \uparrow E\big(\langle M\rangle_t\big) < \infty \quad \text{as } n \uparrow \infty \ ,$$

Therefore $\forall t \geq 0$

$$M_{t\wedge n} \to M_t \ , \quad \text{both in } P\text{-a.s. and in } L^2(P).$$

This implies the martingale property for M_t in the continuous time filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \geq 0)$, since $\forall 0 \leq s \leq t$, $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$,

$$0 = E\big((M_{t\wedge\tau_n} - M_{s\wedge\tau_n})\mathbf{1}_A\big) \longrightarrow E\big((M_t - M_s)\mathbf{1}_A\big) \ , \quad \text{as } n \to \infty \ \square$$

Lemma 40. *(Dominated stochastic convergence) Let (M_s) a continuous local martingale $(Y_s^{(n)})_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ a sequence of locally bounded progressively measurable integrands such that for all s,*

$$|Y_s^{(n)}(\omega)| \to 0 \ P\text{-almost surely}$$

and there is a locally bounded process $X_s(\omega)$ such that

$$|Y_s^{(n)}(\omega)| \leq X_s(\omega), \quad \forall s, n. \ P\text{-almost surely}$$

Then for all $t \geq 0$

$$\sup_{s\leq t} \left| \int_0^t Y_s^{(n)} dM_s \right| \to 0 \quad \text{in probability as } n \to \infty$$

Let $\tau(\omega)$ be a stopping time such that both stopped processes M_s^τ and X_s^τ are bounded. Then by the bounded convergence theorem on the space $\Omega \times \mathbb{R}^+$ equipped with the finite measure $\mu(d\omega, ds) = P(d\omega)\langle M^\tau\rangle(ds, \omega)$

$$E_P\left(\int_0^\tau (Y_s^{(n)})^2 d\langle M_s\rangle\right) \to 0 \text{ as } n \to \infty$$

which implies

$$\int_0^\tau Y_s^{(n)} dM_s \to 0 \quad \text{in } L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P) \text{ and in probability as } n \to \infty$$

To complete the argument, for any given t, choose the localizing stopping time τ such that $P(\tau \leq t) < \varepsilon$ and conclude as

Then by using the Chebychev inequality, Doob's maximal inequality and Ito isometry

$$P\biggl(\sup_{s\le t}\biggl|\int_0^t Y^{(n)}_s dM_s\biggr|>\eta\biggr)\le P(\tau\le t)+P\biggl(\sup_{s\le t}\biggl|\int_0^{t\wedge\tau} Y^{(n)}_s dM_s\biggr|>\eta\biggr)$$
$$\le P(\tau\le t)+\frac{1}{\eta^2}E_P\biggl(\sup_{s\le t}\biggl(\int_0^{t\wedge\tau} Y^{(n)}_s dM_s\biggr)^2\biggr)\le P(\tau\le t)+\frac{4}{\eta^2}E_P\biggl(\biggl(\int_0^{t\wedge\tau} Y^{(n)}_s dM_s\biggr)^2\biggr)$$
$$=P(\tau\le t)+\frac{4}{\eta^2}E_P\biggl(\int_0^{t\wedge\tau}\bigl(Y^{(n)}_s\bigr)^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\biggr)\le 2\varepsilon$$

for n large enough.

Definition 45. *We say that $X_t = X_0 + M_t + A_t$ is a continuous semimartingale when $M_0 = A_0 = 0$, M_t is a continuous local martingale and A_t is continuous, $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted with locally finite variation.*

When Y_t is a $\mathbb{F}$-progressive process such that $\forall 0\le t<\infty$

$$\int_0^t Y_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s<\infty \quad \textit{and} \quad \int_0^t |Y_s||dA|_s<\infty \quad P\textit{-almost surely}$$

where the integral on the right side is with respect to the total variation of A, we define

$$\int_0^t Y_s dX_s=\int_0^t Y_s dM_s+\int_0^t Y_s dA_s$$

We also have $[X,X]=[M,M]=\langle M\rangle=\langle X\rangle$

8.2 Ito formula for semimartingales

Proposition 31. *Let X_t, Y_t continuous semimartingales. Then we have the integration by parts formula*

$$X_tY_t=X_0Y_0+\int_0^t X_s dY_s+\int_0^t Y_s dX_s+[X,Y]_t$$

Proof. By polarization it is enough to show

$$X_t^2-X_0^2-[X,X]_t=2\int_0^t X_s dX_s$$

Since the formula is true when X has finite variation, it is enough to show

$$M_t^2-M_0^2-[M,M]_t=2\int_0^t M_s dM_s$$

when M is a continuous local martingale.

By taking telescopic sums on a time-grid $\Pi=(0=t_0<t_1<t_2<\dots)$, by the discrete integration by parts formula

$$\sum_i\bigl(M_{t_i\wedge t}-M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}\bigr)^2=M_t^2-M_0^2-2\sum_i M_{t_{i-1}}\bigl(M_{t_i\wedge t}-M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}\bigr)$$

Note that

$$\sum_i M_{t_{i-1}}\big(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}\big) = \big(Y^\Pi \cdot M\big)_t$$

where on the left side we have an Ito integral with simple predictable integrand

$$Y^\Pi(s,\omega) := \sum_{i>0} M_{t_{i-1}} \mathbf{1}(t_{i-1} < s \le t_i)$$

Since M is cádlág (P-almost surely), as $\Delta(\Pi) = \sup_i\{t_i - t_{i-1}\} \to 0$

$$Y^\Pi(s,\omega) \to M(s,\omega)$$

P-almost surely $\forall s$, Moreover for each $t > 0$,

$$\sup_{s\le t} |Y^\Pi(s)| \le \sup_{s\le t} |M(s)| \text{ which is locally bounded.}$$

Then, as $\Delta(\Pi) \to 0$, dominated stochastic convergence Lemma 40 applies,

$$\sup_{0\le t\le T}\left|\sum_{t_i\in\Pi} M_{t_{i-1}}\big(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}\big) - \int_0^t M(s-)dM(s)\right| \stackrel{P}{\longrightarrow} 0$$

$$\sup_{0\le t\le T}\left|\sum_{t_i\in\Pi} \big(M_{t_i\wedge t} - M_{t_{i-1}\wedge t}\big)^2 - [M,M]_t\right| \stackrel{P}{\longrightarrow} 0$$

in probability uniformly on compact intervals, and

$$[M,M]_t = M_t^2 - M_0^2 - 2\int_0^t M_s dM_s$$

□

Theorem 29. *(Ito formula) When $X_t(\omega) \in \mathbb{R}^d$ is a continuous semimartingale and $f \in C^2(\mathbb{R}^d, \mathbb{R})$*

$$f(X_t) = f(X_0) + \sum_{i=1}^d \int_0^t \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i}(X_s) dX_s^{(i)} + \frac{1}{2}\sum_{i,j}\int_0^t \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i \partial x_j}(X_s) d\langle X^{(i)}, X^{(j)}\rangle_s$$

Proof When the result holds for the function $f(x_1,\dots,x_d)$, by the integration by parts formula is holds also for the function $g(x_1,\dots,x_d) = x_i f(x_1,\dots,x_d)$. It follows that Ito formula holds when $f(x)$ is a polynomial. By stopping it is enough to consider the case when $|X_t(\omega)| \le C < \infty$ P a.s. Since continuous functions are approximated uniformly on compacts by polynomials (Bernstein theorem), we find a polynomial $f_n(x)$ such that

$$\sup_{|x|\le C}\big|(f_n - f)(x)\big| \le \frac{1}{n},\ \sup_{|x|\le C}\left|\frac{\partial(f_n - f)}{\partial x_i}(x)\right| \le \frac{1}{n},\ \sup_{|x|\le C}\left|\frac{\partial^2(f_n - f)}{\partial x_i \partial x_j}(x)\right| \le \frac{1}{n}$$

This implies P-almost sure convergence

$$f_n(X_t) \longrightarrow f(X_t), \quad \int_0^t \frac{\partial^2 f_n}{\partial x_i \partial x_j}(X_s) d\langle X^{(i)}, X^{(j)}\rangle_s \longrightarrow \int_0^t \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i \partial x_j}(X_s) d\langle X^{(i)}, X^{(j)}\rangle_s$$

uniformly on finite intervals, and by the dominated stochastic convergence lemma 40

$$\int_0^t \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i}(X_s)dX_s^{(i)} \xrightarrow{P} \int_0^t \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i}(X_s)dX_s^{(i)}$$

in probability, uniformly on finite intervals.

Corollary 17. *For semimartingales with jumps the Ito formula holds with a correction term for the jumps:*

$$\begin{aligned} f(X(t)) =& f(X(0)) + \sum_{i=1}^d \int_0^t \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i}(X(s-))dX_i(s) + \frac{1}{2}\sum_{i,j}\int_0^t \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i \partial x_j}(X(s-))d\langle X_i^c, X_j^c\rangle_s \\ &+ \sum_{s\le t}\Big(f(X(s)) - f(X(s-)) - \sum_{i=1}^d \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i}(X(s-))\Delta X(s)\Big) \end{aligned}$$

where $X_i^c(t)$ is the continuous local martingale part of the semimartingale $X_i(t)$.

Proof: in R.Bass book stochastic processes, lemma 17.5.

Theorem 30. *(Lévy characterization of Brownian motion) Let $M_t(\omega) \in \mathbb{R}^d$ a continuous $\mathbb{F}$-adapted process, with $M_0 = 0$. The following conditions are equivalent*

1. *M_t is a d-dimensional $\mathbb{F}$-Brownian motion: it has P a.s. continuous paths, $\forall s \le t$ the increment $(M_t - M_s)$ is P-independent from $\mathcal{F}_s$, and Gaussian with $E(M_t^{(k)} - M_s^{(k)}) = 0, E((M_t^{(k)} - M_s^{(k)})(M_t^{(h)} - M_s^{(h)})) = (t-s)\delta_{kh}$.*

2. *$M_t^{(k)}$ and $(M_t^{(k)}M_t^{(h)} - t\delta_{hk})$ are continuous $\mathbb{F}$-local martingales, $h, k = 1, \dots, d$.*

Proof we know already that 1) $\implies$ 2), and these local martingales are square integrable martingales (all moments of the Gaussian distribution are finite).

Assuming (2), we show that the increments are Gaussian independent from the past. The idea is to study the conditional distribution by usign the characteristic function.

Note first that is $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$ is a localizing sequence for M, $\forall t > 0$, as $n \uparrow \infty$,

$$E\big(M_{t\wedge\tau_n}^2\big) = E\big(\langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n}\big) = E(t\wedge\tau_n) \uparrow t$$

therefore $\big(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} : n \in \mathbb{N}\big)$ is a martingale bounded in L^2 in the discrete time filtration $(\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge\tau_n} : n \in \mathbb{N})$.

Apply Ito formula to

$$f(M_t(\omega), t) = \exp\Big(i\theta\cdot M_t(\omega) + \frac{1}{2}|\theta|^2 t\Big) \in \mathbb{C}$$

(which means to apply separately Ito formula to real and imaginary parts), obtaining

$$f(M_t,t) - f(M_s,s) =$$
$$i\sum_{k=1}^{d}\theta_k \int_s^t f(M_r,r)dM_r^{(k)} + \frac{i^2}{2}\sum_{k,h}\theta_k\theta_h f(M_r,r)d\langle M^{(k)},M^{(h)}\rangle_r + \frac{|\theta|^2}{2}\int_s^t f(M_r,r)dr =$$
$$= i\sum_{k=1}^{d}\theta_i \int_s^t f(M_r,r)dM_r^{(k)}$$

where the finite variation parts cancels since $\langle M^{(k)}, M^{(h)}\rangle_r = r\delta_{kh}$.

Therefore $f(M_t,t)$ is a local martingale. It is a true square integrable martingale since for all t

$$|f(M_t,t)| \le \exp\big(\frac{1}{2}|\theta|^2 t\big)$$

Let $s \le t$ and $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$. By the martingale property $\forall\theta \in \mathbb{R}^d$,

$$E\Big(\big(f(M_t,t) - f(M_s,s)\big)\mathbf{1}_A\Big) = 0$$
$$\Longrightarrow E\Big(\exp\big(i\theta\cdot(M_t - M_s)\big)\mathbf{1}_A\Big) = E\Big(E\Big(\exp\big(i\theta\cdot(M_t-M_s)\big)\Big|\mathcal{F}_s\Big)\mathbf{1}_A\Big) =$$
$$\exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}|\theta|^2(t-s)\Big)P(A)$$

which implies

$$E\Big(\exp\big(i\theta\cdot(M_t-M_s)\big)\Big|\mathcal{F}_s\Big) = \exp\Big(-\frac{1}{2}|\theta|^2 s\Big) \text{ (deterministic)}$$

Since the characteristic function characterizes the distribution, $(M_t - M_s)$ is independent from $\mathcal{F}_s$ and Gaussian, with zero mean and covariance $(t-s)\mathrm{Id}$ □

Every continuous local martingale is a randomly time changed Brownian motion:

Proposition 32. *(Dambis, Dubins-Schwartz : random time change representation) Let (M_t) a continuous martingale in the filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \ge 0)$ with $M_0 = 0$ and $\langle M\rangle_\infty = \infty$. Consider the of $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times*

$$\sigma(u) = \inf\big\{t : \langle M\rangle_t \ge u\big\}, \quad u \ge 0$$

with $\sigma(u) \le \sigma(v)$ for $u \le v$, a and the filtration $\mathbb{G} = (\mathcal{G}_u : u \ge 0)$ with $\mathcal{G}_u = \mathcal{F}_{\sigma(u)}$.

Then $B_u = M_{\sigma(u)}$ is a Brownian motion in the filtration $\mathbb{G}$.

Proof. Note that the map $u \to \sigma(u,\omega)$ is left continuous but not necessarily right continuous: M_t and $\langle M\rangle_t$ could be constant in some random intervals.

However $u \mapsto \langle M\rangle_{\sigma(u)}$ is continuous (P a.s.) since

$$\langle M\rangle_{\sigma(u)} = u$$

This implies that $u \mapsto M_{\sigma(u)}$ is continuous, since $t \mapsto M_t$ is continuous (P a.s.), and M_t in constant on the random intervals $[\sigma(u-), \sigma(u)]$ where $\langle M \rangle_t$ does not increase.

We show that B_u is a $\mathbb{G}$-martingale: Let τ_n be a localizing sequence for M_t such that $|M_{t\wedge\tau_n}| \leq n$. Note that $\langle M \rangle_{\tau_n} \uparrow \infty$ since $\langle M \rangle_\infty = \infty$ and $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$. Also τ_n is a $\mathbb{G}$ stopping time since $\tau_n \leq \sigma(u)$ is $\mathcal{F}_{\sigma(u)}$ measurable :

$$\{\tau_n \leq \sigma(u)\} \cap \{\sigma(u) \leq t\} = \{\tau_n \leq \sigma(u)\} \cap \{\tau_n \leq t\} \cap \{\sigma(u) \leq t\} \in \mathcal{F}_t \quad \forall t \geq 0 \tag{8.11}$$

where both $\tau_n \mathbf{1}(\tau \leq t)$ and $\sigma(u)\mathbf{1}(\sigma(u) \leq t)$ are $\mathcal{F}_t$-measurable.

Then by Doob's optional sampling theorem, for $u \leq v$

$$E_P\big(M_{\tau_n \wedge \sigma(v)} \big| \mathcal{F}_{\sigma(u)}\big) = M_{\tau_n \wedge \sigma(u)}$$

which means that $B_u = M_{\sigma(u)}$ is a local martingale with localizing sequence τ_n in the filtration $\mathbb{G}$.

Note also that since the predictable and quadratic variation of a continuous local martingale coincide, by construction

$$\langle B \rangle_u = [B]_u = [M]_{\sigma(u)} = \langle M \rangle_{\sigma(u)} = u$$

By Lévy's characterization theorem B_t is a Brownian motion in the filtration $\mathbb{G}$. □

Remark Let $M_t = \exp(W_t - \frac{1}{2}t) - 1$, where W_t is an $\mathbb{F}$-Brownian motion. It follows that $M_t \geq -1 \; \forall t$, so we cannot obtain a Brownian motion by random time change. In fact

$$\langle M \rangle_\infty = \int_0^\infty \exp(2B_t - t)dt < \infty \tag{8.12}$$

since by the law of large numbers $\frac{2B_t}{t} \longrightarrow 0$ as $t \longrightarrow \infty$ P-a.s. By the random time change we can obtain only a stopped Brownian motion.

8.2.1 Ito representation of local L^2 martingales

Theorem 31. *(Ito integral representation) Let $X, M \in \mathcal{M}_2^{loc}$ local L^2-martingales, with $M_0 = 0$. There exists a predictable process $Y(s)$ with*

$$\int_0^t Y(s)^2 d\langle M \rangle_s$$

and a local L^2-martingale N with $\langle M, N \rangle = 0$ such that X has the Ito representation

$$X(t) = N(t) + \int_0^t H(s)dM(s). \tag{8.13}$$

H and N are unique up to indistinguishability. Note that this holds also for local L^2-martingales with jumps !

Proof. By localization we can assume that $X, M \in \mathcal{M}_2$ (martingales bounded in L^2), otherwise we would consider stopped process X^{τ_n}, M^{τ_n} for some common localizing sequence τ_n of $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times. The space of Ito integrals with respect to M

$$\mathcal{I}(M) = \left\{ (K \cdot M) = \int_0^{\cdot} K(s) M(ds) \; : \; H \text{ is predictable and } E\biggl(\int_0^{\infty} K(s)^2 d\langle M \rangle_s \biggr) < \infty \right\}$$

is a closed subspace of the Hilbert space $\mathcal{M}_2$. An $X \in \mathcal{M}_2$ has an unique orthogonal projection on $\mathcal{I}(M)$, which is an Ito integral

$$(H \cdot M) = \int_0^{\cdot} H(s) dM(s) \quad \text{for some predictable } H \text{ with } E\biggl(\int_0^{\infty} K(s)^2 d\langle M \rangle_s \biggr) < \infty$$

satisfying

$$E\bigl((K \cdot M)_{\infty} X_{\infty} \bigr) = E\bigl((K \cdot M)_{\infty} (H \cdot M)_{\infty} \bigr) = E\biggl(\int_0^{\infty} K(s) H(s) d\langle M \rangle_s \biggr) .$$

Let

$$N(t) := X(t) - \int_0^t H(s) dM(s) \tag{8.14}$$

is the orthogonal complement in $\mathcal{M}_2$, such that $E(N(\infty)M(\infty)) = 0$. For any bounded stopping time τ

$$E\bigl(N(\tau)M(\tau)\bigr) = E\bigl(E(N(\infty)|\mathcal{F}_{\tau})M(\tau)\bigr) = E\bigl(N(\infty)M(\tau)\bigr) = E\bigl(N(\infty)M^{\tau}(\infty)\bigr) = E\bigl(N(\infty)M^{\tau}(\infty)\bigr) = 0$$

where the stopped process $M^{\tau} \in \mathcal{I}(M)$, since

$$M^{\tau}(t) = M_{t \wedge \tau} = \int_0^t \mathbf{1}(\tau \geq s) dM(s) .$$

and by Lemma 38 it follows that $N(t)M(t)$ is a martingale, and $\langle M, N \rangle = 0$.

We have also

$$\langle X, M \rangle_t = \int_0^t H(s) d\langle M \rangle_s , \tag{8.15}$$

which implies that the measures

$$\nu^{M,X}(d\omega, dt) = P(d\omega) \langle M, X \rangle(dt)$$

defined on the product σ-algebra $\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}_+)$ is absolutely continuous with respect to the measure

$$\nu^{M,M}(d\omega, dx) = P(d\omega) \langle M, M \rangle(dt)$$

In particular $\nu^{M,X} \ll \nu^{M,M}$ on the predictable σ-algebra $\mathcal{P}$ and from (8.15) we see that

$$H(s, \omega) = \frac{d\bigl(P \times \langle M, X \rangle\bigr)}{d\bigl(P \times \langle M, M \rangle\bigr)}(s, \omega) = \frac{d\langle M, X \rangle}{d\langle M, M \rangle}(s, \omega)$$

is a Radon-Nikodym derivative on the predictable σ-algebra $\mathcal{P}$.

When M and X are only local L^2-martingales and $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$ is a common localization sequence, for each n we obtain

$$X(t \wedge \tau_n) = N^{(n)}(t \wedge \tau_n) + \int_0^{t\wedge\tau_n} H^{(n)}(s) dM(s)$$

where for $m \leq n$ $\tau_m \leq \tau_n$ and by uniqueness

$$N^{(n)}(t \wedge \tau_m) = N^{(m)}(t \wedge \tau_m), \quad H^{(n)}(s)\mathbf{1}(s \leq \tau_m) = H^{(m)}(s)\mathbf{1}(s \leq \tau_m)$$

This defines the predictable process

$$H(s) = \sum_n H^{(n)}(s)\mathbf{1}(\tau_{n-1} < s \leq \tau_n),$$

and the orthogonal local L^2 martingale

$$N(t) = \sum_n \big(N^{(n)}(t \wedge \tau_n) - N^{(n)}(t \wedge \tau_{n-1}) \big)$$

in the representation (8.13). □

8.3 Ito representation in the Brownian filtration

Let $B_t = (B_t^{(1)}, \dots, B_t^{(d)})$ a d-dimensional Brownian motion.

Theorem 32. *Let $Y \in L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_T^B, P)$, $T \in (0, +\infty]$ a real valued random variable. Then there is a progressive process $H_s(\omega) \in \mathbb{R}^d$ with*

$$E_P\bigg(\int_0^T H_s^2 ds \bigg) < \infty$$

$$Y(\omega) = E_P(Y) + \int_0^T H_s dB_s = E_P(Y) + \sum_{i=1}^d \int_0^T H_s^{(i)} dB_s^{(i)}$$

$H_s(\omega)$ is unique $P(d\omega) \times ds$ almost surely.

Proof. Uniqueness: if $\widetilde{H}_s$ has the same property, then by Ito isometry

$$\int_\Omega \bigg(\int_0^T \big(H_s(\omega) - \widetilde{H}_s(\omega) \big)^2 ds \bigg) P(d\omega) = 0$$

Existence:

$$\mathcal{H} = \bigg\{ \int_0^T H_s dB_s : \ H \text{ is progressive and in } L^2(\Omega \times [0,T], dP \times dt) \bigg\}$$

is a closed subspace of $L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_T^B, P)$, which follows since the space of progressive integrands in $L^2(\Omega \times [0,T], dP \times dt)$ is complete.

We show that it is total, in the sense that if $Y \in L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_T^B, P)$ such that $E_P\Big(Y \int_0^T H_s dB_s\Big) = 0$ for all progressive $H \in L^2(\Omega \times [0,T], dP \times dt)$, then $Y(\omega) = E_P(Y)$.

The random variable $\big(Y(\omega) - E_P(Y)\big)$ coincides with its orthogonal projection on the closed subspace $\mathcal{H}$, and the results follows.

Without loss of generality assume that $E_P(Y) = 0$, otherwise take $\widetilde{Y}(\omega) = (Y(\omega) - E_P(Y))$. For $f(x) \in L^2([0,T], dt)$ with values in $\mathbb{R}^d$, consider the complex valued square integrable martingale

$$M_t^{(f)} = \exp\bigg(i\int_0^t f(s)dB_s + \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t |f(s)|^2 ds\bigg), \quad i = \sqrt{-1}$$

By Ito formula

$$M_T^{(f)} - 1 = i\int_0^T M_s^{(f)} f(s)dB_s$$

Since the real and imaginary parts of the right hand side are stochastic integrals in $\mathcal{H}$,

$$0 = E_P\Big(Y(M_T^{(f)} - 1)\Big) = E_P\Big(YM_T^{(f)}\Big) - E_P(Y) = E_P\Big(YM_T^{(f)}\Big)$$

When $f(s) = \sum_{i=1}^n \theta_k \mathbf{1}_{[0,t_k]}(s)$ for $\theta_k \in \mathbb{R}^d$, $t_k \in [0,T]$, $k = 1, \dots n, n \in \mathbb{N}$ it follows that

$$\begin{aligned}
0 &= E_P\bigg(Y\exp\bigg(i\sum_{k=1}^n \theta_k \cdot B_{t_k} + \frac{1}{2}\sum_{h,k=1}^n \theta_h\theta_k\ (t_h \wedge t_k)\bigg)\bigg) \\
&= E_P\bigg(Y\exp\bigg(i\sum_{k=1}^n \theta_k \cdot B_{t_k}\bigg)\bigg)\exp\bigg(\frac{1}{2}\sum_{h,k=1}^n \theta_h\theta_k\ (t_h \wedge t_k)\bigg) \\
&\Longrightarrow E_P\bigg(Y\exp\bigg(i\sum_{k=1}^n \theta_k \cdot B_{t_k}\bigg)\bigg) = 0
\end{aligned}$$

By the Lévy inversion theorem, which holds not on only for probability measures but also for finite signed measures, the characteristic function characterizes the measure.

Since the characteristic function is identically zero, $\forall A_k \in \mathcal{B}(\mathbb{R}^d), k = 1, \dots, n$,

$$\mu(C) := \mu_{t_1,\dots t_n}(A_1 \times \cdots \times A_n) := E_P\Big(Y\mathbf{1}\big(B_{t_1} \in A_1, \dots, B_{t_n} \in A_n\big)\Big) = 0\,.$$

where C is the cylinder

$$\big\{\omega : B_{t_1}(\omega) \in A_1, \dots, B_{t_n}(\omega) \in A_n\big\}$$

Since the cylinders generate the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_T^B$, by Dynkin extension theorem

$$\mu(F) := E_P(Y\mathbf{1}_F) = 0 \qquad \forall F \in \mathcal{F}_T^B$$

By assumption $Y \in \mathcal{F}_T^B$ measurable, by taking $F^{\pm} = \{\omega : \pm Y(\omega) > 0\}$, we see that $Y(\omega) = 0$ P-a.s. □

Corollary 18. *Let* (M_t) *a martingale in the Brownian filtration bounded in* L^2*, i.e.* $E_P(M_\infty^2) < \infty$*. Then*

$$M_t = E_P(M_\infty | \mathcal{F}_t^B)(\omega) = M_0 + \int_0^t H_s dB_s$$

where the integrand $H \in L^2(\Omega \times \mathbb{R}^+, dP \times dt)$ *is progressive and unique* $P(d\omega) \times dt$ *almost surely. Note that since* $\mathcal{F}_0^B$ *is* P*-trivial,* $M_0 = E_P(M_0) = E_P(M_t) = E_P(M_\infty)$*.*

8.3.1 Computation of martingale representation

There are basically two ways compute the martingale representation of a random variable $F(\omega) \in L^2(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_T^W, P)$. When $F(\omega) = f(X_T)$, and X_t is a Markov process adapted to the Brownian filtration $\mathbb{F}^W$, it is possible to do it by first computing the conditional density of X_T conditionally on $\mathcal{F}_t^B$ and then taking the Ito differential.

A more general way to do it wihout using the Markov property is to use the Ito-Clarck Ocone formula of Malliavin calculus.

Let $F(\omega) = f(B_T(\omega))$ for some $f(x) \in L^2(\mathbb{R}, \gamma(x)dx)$.

$$\begin{aligned}
&E\big(f(B_T)\big|\mathcal{F}_t\big) = E\big(f(B_t + (B_T - B_t))\big|\mathcal{F}_t\big) \\
&= E\bigg(f(x + G\sqrt{T-t})\bigg)\bigg|_{x=B_t(\omega)} \\
&= \int_{\mathbb{R}} f(B_t(\omega) + y\sqrt{T-t})\gamma(y)dy = \\
&\int_{\mathbb{R}} f(u)\frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}\gamma\bigg(\frac{B_t - u}{\sqrt{T-t}}\bigg)dy =
\end{aligned}$$

where $G(\omega) \sim \mathcal{N}(0,1)$ is a standard Gaussian random variable with

$$P(G \in dy) = \gamma(y)dy = (2\pi)^{-1/2}\exp\big(-y^2/2\big)dy$$

Next we apply Ito formula and integration by parts to

$$g(B_t, u; t, T) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}\gamma\bigg(\frac{B_t - u}{\sqrt{T-t}}\bigg) = \frac{P(B_T \in du | B_t)}{du}$$

We do the calculation in steps:

$$\gamma'(y) = -y\gamma(y),\ \gamma''(y) = \gamma(y)(y^2-1),\ \frac{d}{dt}(T-t)^{-1/2} = \frac{1}{2}(T-t)^{-3/2}$$

and for a continuous semimartingale Y_t

$$d\gamma(Y_t) = \gamma(Y_t)\bigg(-Y_t dY_t + \frac{1}{2}(Y_t^2 - 1)d\langle Y\rangle_t\bigg)$$

Now for $Y_t = \frac{(B_t - u)}{\sqrt{T-t}}$ we have using integration by parts

$$dY_t = \frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}dB_t + \frac{1}{2}\frac{(B_t - u)}{(T-t)^{3/2}}dt, \quad d\langle Y\rangle_t = \frac{1}{(T-t)}dt$$

Therefore

$$d\gamma(Y_t) = \gamma(Y_t)\biggl(-\frac{(B_t-u)}{T-t}dB_t - \frac{1}{2}\frac{(B_t-u)^2}{(T-t)^2}dt + \frac{1}{2}\biggl(\frac{(B_t-u)^2}{T-t} - 1\biggr)\frac{1}{T-t}dt\biggr) =$$
$$-\gamma(Y_t)\biggl(\frac{B_t-u}{T-t}dB_t + \frac{1}{2(T-t)}dt\biggr)$$

Integrating by parts:

$$d\biggl(\frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}\gamma(Y_t)\biggr) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}\gamma(Y_t)\biggl(-\frac{B_t-u}{T-t}dB_t - \frac{1}{2(T-t)}dt + \frac{1}{2(T-t)}dt\biggr)$$
$$= \frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}\gamma\biggl(\frac{B_t-u}{\sqrt{T-t}}\biggr)\biggl(\frac{u-B_t}{T-t}\biggr)dB_t$$

Therefore we have simply

$$g(B_t,u,t,T) = g(0,u,0,T) + \int_0^t g(B_s,u,s,T)\biggl(\frac{u-B_s}{T-s}\biggr)dB_s$$

for fixed u and T, this is a solution of the linear stochastic differential equation

$$X_t(u,T) = X_0(u,T) + \int_0^t X_s(u,T)\biggl(\frac{u-B_s}{T-s}\biggr)dB_s$$

with $X_0(u,T) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{T}}\gamma\bigl(\frac{u}{\sqrt{T}}\bigr)$.

By Ito formula the stochastic exponential

$$g(B_t,u,t,T) = g(0,u,0,T)\mathcal{E}\biggl(\int_0^{\cdot}\biggl(\frac{u-B_s}{T-s}\biggr)dB_s\biggr)_t$$
$$= g(0,u,0,T)\exp\biggl(\int_0^t\biggl(\frac{u-B_s}{T-s}\biggr)dB_s - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t\biggl(\frac{u-B_s}{T-s}\biggr)^2 ds\biggr) =$$
$$g(0,u,0,T)\exp\bigl(M_t(u,T) - \frac{1}{2}\langle M(u,T)\rangle_t\bigr)$$

solves the SDE in the interval $[0,T)$, where the Ito integral

$$M_t(u,T) := \int_0^t \frac{u-B_s}{T-s}dB_s$$

exists $\forall 0 \le t < T$ since

$$\int_0^t \frac{E\bigl((u-B_s)^2\bigr)}{(T-s)^2}ds = \int_0^t \frac{u^2+s^2}{(T-s)^2}ds$$
$$= (T^2+u^2)\bigl((T-t)^{-1} - T^{-1}\bigr) + 2T(\log(T) - \log(T-t)) + t < \infty$$

However

$$\int_0^T \frac{u^2+s^2}{(T-s)^2}ds = +\infty$$

When for $u \neq B_T(\omega)$, $\langle M_t(u,T)\rangle = \infty$ and $g(B_T,u,T,T) = 0$.

For $u = B_T(\omega)$, there is a problem in defining the Ito integral

$$\int_0^t \left(\frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} \right) dB_s$$

which appears inside the exponential form of $g(B_t, B_T, t, T)$, since the integrand $(B_T - B_s)(T - s)^{-1}$ is non-adapted.

One way to define such stochastic integrals is to consider the *initially enlarged filtration* $\mathbb{G} = \{\mathcal{G}_t\}$ with $\mathcal{G}_t = \mathcal{F}_t \vee \sigma(B_T)$.

B_t is not a $(P, \mathbb{G})$-martingale anymore, it becomes a Brownian bridge pinned to the final value B_T, which has a semimartingale decomposition

$$B_t = \widetilde{B}_t + \int_0^t \frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} ds$$

where $\widetilde{B}_t$ is a $(P, \mathbb{G})$ Brownian motion. We remark that the drift process

$$\int_0^t \frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} ds$$

has integrable total variation on the close interval $[0, T]$, since

$$E\left(\int_0^T \left| \frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} \right| ds \right) = \int_0^T E\left(\frac{|B_T - B_s|}{\sqrt{T - s}} \right) \frac{1}{\sqrt{T - s}} ds =$$
$$\int_0^T E(|G|) \frac{1}{\sqrt{T - s}} |ds = 2\sqrt{T} E(|G|) < \infty$$

where $G \sim \mathcal{N}(0, 1)$. Therefore B_t is a $(P, \mathbb{G})$-semimartingale. By taking the stochastic integral in the $\mathbb{G}$ filtration

$$\int_0^t \frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} dB_s - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t \left(\frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} \right)^2 ds$$
$$= \int_0^t \frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} d\widetilde{B}_s + \int_0^t \left(\frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} \right)^2 ds - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t \left(\frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} \right)^2 ds =$$
$$\int_0^t \frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} d\widetilde{B}_s + \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t \left(\frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} \right)^2 ds$$

Now

$$\left\langle \int_0^{\cdot} \frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} d\widetilde{B}_s \right\rangle_t = \int_0^t \left(\frac{B_T - B_s}{T - s} \right)^2 ds = \int_0^t \frac{(B_T - B_s)^2}{T - s} \frac{1}{T - s} ds \to \infty$$

as $t \to T$, which implies $g(B_t, B_T, t, T) \to \infty$ as $t \to T$.

Heuristically, $g(B_T, u, T, T) = \delta_0(u - B_T)$ is a Dirac's delta function in the sense of distributions with mass at the random point $B_T(\omega)$. Without using the language of distributions it is clear that since B_T is $\mathcal{F}_T$ measurable and at time T the conditional distribution of B_T given $\mathcal{F}_T$ becomes degenerate.

When we integrate a test function $f(x)$

$$E_P(f(B_T)|\mathcal{F}_t) =$$
$$\int_{\mathbf{R}} f(u)g(B_t,u,t,T)du = \int_{\mathbf{R}} f(u)g(0,u,0,T)du + \int_{\mathbf{R}}\biggl(\int_0^t f(u)\Bigl(\frac{u-B_s}{T-s}\Bigr)g(B_s,u,s,T)dB_s\biggr)du$$
$$= E_P(f(B_T)) + \int_0^t \biggl(\int_{\mathbf{R}} f(u)\Bigl(\frac{u-B_s}{T-s}\Bigr)g(B_s,u,s,T)du\biggr)dB_s$$
$$= E_P(f(B_T)) + \int_0^t \frac{E_P\bigl(f(B_T)(B_T-B_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\bigr)}{(T-s)}dB_s$$

where we used a stochastic Fubini theorem 33, to be explained in the next paragraph, in order to invert the order of integration w.r.t. between du and dB_s. Note that

$$\frac{E_P(f(B_T)(B_T-B_s)|\mathcal{F}_s)}{T-s} = \frac{E_P\bigl((f(B_T)-f(B_s))(B_T-B_s)|\mathcal{F}_s\bigr)}{T-s}$$
$$= \frac{E_P\biggl(\bigl\{f(B_T)-E(f(B_T)|\mathcal{F}_s)\bigr\}\{B_T-B_s\}\bigg|\mathcal{F}_s\biggr)}{T-s} = \frac{\mathrm{Cov}(f(B_T),B_T|\mathcal{F}_s)}{\mathrm{Var}(B_T|\mathcal{F}_s)}$$

is a conditional covariance/variance ratio.

The interpretation is that

$$\widehat{E}(f(B_T)|\mathcal{F}_s, B_T-B_s) := E(f(B_T)|\mathcal{F}_s) + \frac{\mathrm{Cov}(f(B_T),B_T|\mathcal{F}_s)}{\mathrm{Var}(B_T|\mathcal{F}_s)}(B_T-B_s)$$

is the best estimator of $f(B_T)$ in $L^2(P)$ sense, among the estimators which depend linearly on (B_T-B_s) and have $\mathcal{F}_s$-measurable coefficients.

We check the sufficient condition (8.16) in the stochastic Fubini Theorem 33:

$$\int_0^t \frac{E_P\bigl(f(B_T)(B_T-B_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\bigr)}{(T-s)}dB_s$$

We show that the Ito integral

$$\int_0^T \frac{E_P\bigl(f(B_T)(B_T-B_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\bigr)}{(T-s)}dB_s = f(B_T) - E(f(B_T))$$

exists in $L^2(P)$ when $f(B_T)\in L^2(P)$, by showing directly that

$$\int_0^T E\biggl(\biggl\{\frac{E_P\bigl(f(B_T)(B_T-B_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\bigr)}{T-s}\biggr\}^2\biggr)ds < \infty$$

Let's consider first the case when $f(x)$ is polynomial. When $f(x)=x^n$,

$$E\biggl(\biggl\{\frac{E_P\bigl(B_T^n(B_T-B_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\bigr)}{T-s}\biggr\}^2\biggr) = E\biggl(E_P\biggl(\frac{\{x+G\sqrt{T-s}\}^nG}{\sqrt{T-s}}\biggr)\bigg|^2_{x=B_s}\biggr) =$$
$$\frac{1}{T-s}E\Bigl(\{G\sqrt{s}+G'\sqrt{T-s}G'\}^n\{G\sqrt{s}+G''\sqrt{T-s}\}^nG'G''\Bigr)$$

where G, G', G'' are independent standard gaussian,

$$= \frac{1}{T-s} E\Biggl(\Bigl\{ \sum_{k=1}^{n} \binom{n}{k} s^{k/2} (T-s)^{(n-k)/2} G^k (G')^{n-k} \Bigr\} \Bigl\{ \sum_{h=1}^{n} \binom{n}{h} s^{h/2} (T-s)^{(n-h)/2} G^h (G'')^{n-h} \Bigr\} G' G'' \Biggr)$$

$$\frac{1}{T-s} \sum_{k=1}^{n} \sum_{h=1}^{n} \binom{n}{k} \binom{n}{h} s^{(k+h)/2} (T-s)^{n-(k+h)/2} E(G^{k+h}) E((G')^{n-k+1}) E((G'')^{n-h+1})$$

where we Newton binomial formula and the independence. Now the moments of a standard gaussian are given by

$$E(G^{2n+1}) = 0, \quad E(G^{2n}) = (2n-1)!! := \prod_{k=1}^{n} (2k-1) = 1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \cdot \ldots (2n-3) \cdot (2n-1) \qquad n \in \mathbb{N}$$

we obtain

$$= \frac{1}{T-s} \sum_{h,k \in I_n} s^{(k+h)/2} (T-s)^{n-(k+h)/2} (k+h)!!(n-k+1)!!(n-h+1)!!$$

where the sum is over pairs $1 \le h, k \le k$ such that $(k+h)$ is even and $n-k$ $n-h$ are both odd.

When we integrate we obtain

$$\sum_{h,k \in I_n} \binom{n}{k} \binom{n}{h} (k+h)!!(n-k+1)!!(n-h+1)!! \int_0^T s^{(k+h)/2} (T-s)^{n-(k+h)/2} ds =$$

$$\sum_{h,k \in I_n} \binom{n}{k} \binom{n}{h} (k+h)!!(n-k+1)!!(n-h+1)!! T^{n+1} \int_0^1 u^{(k+h)/2} (1-u)^{n-(k+h)/2} du =$$

$$\sum_{h,k \in I_n} \binom{n}{k} \binom{n}{h} (k+h)!!(n-k+1)!!(n-h+1)!! T^{n+1} \frac{\Gamma((k+h)/2)\Gamma(n-(k+h)/2)}{\Gamma(n)}$$

$$= T^n E(G^{2n}) - E(G^n)^2$$

Note also that we proved in between that $g(x,u,s,T)$ satisfies the heat equation

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial s} g(x,u,s,T) + \frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} g(x,u,s,T) = 0$$

with boundary condition $g(x,u,T,T) = \delta_0(x-u)$ the Dirac delta function in the sense of Schwartz distributions.

Up to now we just assumed that $f \in L^2(\mathbb{R}, d\gamma)$. When $f(x) = f(0) + \int_0^x f'(u)du$ is absolutely continuous with respect to Lebesgue measure we can use the *Gaussian integration by parts* formula

$$E(f(B_t)B_t) = tE_P(f'(B_t))$$

which holds when $B_t \sim \mathcal{N}(0,t)$ Gaussian.

In this case we write Ito's representation also as

$$E_P\bigl(f(B_T)\big|\mathcal{F}_t\bigr) = E_P\bigl(f(B_T)\bigr) + \int_0^t E_P\bigl(f'(B_T)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\bigr) dB_s$$

Example Let $F(\omega) = f\Big(\int_0^T h(s)dB_s\Big)$, where $h(s) \in L^2([0,T], ds)$ is deterministic and $E_P\big(f(\| h \|_2 G)^2\big) < \infty$, for $G(\omega)$ standard Gaussian r.v.

Then we have the representation

$$F(\omega) = E_P\big(f(\| h \|_2 G)\big) + \int_0^T \frac{E_P\Big(f\Big(\int_0^T h(s)dB_s\Big) \int_t^T h(s)dB_s \Big| \mathcal{F}_s\Big)}{\int_t^T h(s)^2 ds} h(t)dB_t$$

Hint: define the deterministic time change

$$\tau(u) = \inf\Big\{t : \int_0^t h(s)^2 ds \geq u\Big\}$$

Then by Lévy characterization theorem $\widetilde{B}_u := \int_0^{\tau(u)} h(s)dB_s$ is a Brownian motion and $\mathcal{F}_u^{\widetilde{B}} = \mathcal{F}_{\tau(u)}^B$.

Letting $\widetilde{T} = \int_0^T h(s)^2 ds$.

In Malliavin calculus these ideas are extended to more general setting where there is not need to use the Markov property.

Theorem 33. *Stochastic Fubini theorem, version 1.*

Let $(\Theta, \mathcal{A}, \alpha(d\theta))$ be a measurable space, where $\alpha(d\theta)$ is a σ-finite measure, and $H(s,\omega,\theta)$ a jointly measurable process, such that the map $\theta \mapsto H(s,\omega,\theta)$ is $\mathcal{A}$-measurable for each (s,ω) and the map $(s,\omega) \mapsto H(s,\omega,\theta)$ is $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-progressive for each $\theta \in \Theta$.

Assuming that for all t, P-almost surely

$$\int_{[0,t]\times\Theta} H(s,\omega,\theta)^2 (\alpha \otimes \langle M \rangle)(d\theta \times ds) < \infty \tag{8.16}$$

which by the classical Fubini theorem does not depend on the order of integration. Then

$$\int_0^t \Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\omega,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\Big) dM_s = \int_\Theta \Big(\int_0^t H(s,\omega,\theta)dM_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta), \quad P \ a.s \tag{8.17}$$

is a local martingale which does not depend on the order of integration.

Proof Assume first that $\alpha(d\theta)$ is a probability measure, and consider the product space $\widetilde{\Omega} = \Omega \times \Theta$ equipped with the product σ-algebra and the product probability $\widetilde{P}(d\widetilde{\omega}) = P(d\omega) \times \alpha(d\theta)$, with $\widetilde{\omega} = (\omega, \theta)$. In this probability space we use the filtration $\widetilde{\mathbb{F}} = (\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}_t)$ with $\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}_t := \mathcal{F}_t \otimes \mathcal{A}$.

We define on this probability space the local martingale $\widetilde{M}_t(\widetilde{\omega}) = M_t(\omega)$, and the integrand $\widetilde{H}(s,\widetilde{\omega}) := H(s,\omega,\theta)$.

Note that

$$\widetilde{P}\Big(\int_0^t \widetilde{H}(s)^2 d\langle \widetilde{M} \rangle_s < \infty\Big) \geq P\Big(\int_\Theta \int_0^t H(s,\theta)^2 d\langle \widetilde{M} \rangle_s < \infty\Big) = 1$$

Therefore we are in the settings of Proposition 29 and the Ito integral

$$\int_0^t \widetilde{H}(s) d\widetilde{M}_s$$

exists on $(\widetilde{\Omega}, \widetilde{\mathcal{F}}, \widetilde{P})$ and it is a $\widetilde{P}$-local martingale. This means that there is a localizing sequence of $\widetilde{\mathbb{F}}$-stopping times $\widetilde{\tau}_n(\widetilde{\omega}) \uparrow \infty$ $\widetilde{P}$ almost surely such that the stopped process $(\widetilde{H} \cdot \widetilde{M})_{t \wedge \widetilde{\tau}_n}$ is a $(\widetilde{P}, \widetilde{\mathbb{F}})$-square integrable martingale.

Then we define on $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, P)$ the random processes

$$\int_0^t H(s,\theta) dM_s := \int_0^t \widetilde{H}(s) d\widetilde{M}_s \text{ for } (\omega, \theta) = \widetilde{\omega}$$

Note that $\tau_n(\omega, \theta) := \widetilde{\tau}_n(\widetilde{\omega})$, defines a sequence of $\mathbb{F}$-stopping times on Ω which are measurable with respect to the parameter θ. Unless Θ was a finite set, this does not guarantee that there exists a localizing sequence $\sigma_n(\omega)$ of $\mathbb{F}$ stopping times which is localizing simultaneously the stochastic processes $\int_0^t H(s,\theta) dM_s$ for all $\theta \in \Theta$, and it is not clear whether

$$\int_\Theta \biggl(\int_0^t H(s,\theta) dM_s \biggr) \alpha(d\theta)$$

is a $(P, \mathbb{F})$-local martingale.

Let's take a step back and work under the stronger assumption

$$E_P \biggl(\int_{[0,t] \times \Theta} H(s,\omega,\theta)^2 (\alpha \otimes \langle M \rangle)(d\theta \times dt) \biggr) = E_{\widetilde{P}} \biggl(\int_0^t \widetilde{H}(s)^2 d\langle \widetilde{M} \rangle_s \biggr) < \infty \tag{8.18}$$

Then by Theorem 28

$$\int_0^t \widetilde{H}(s) d\widetilde{M}_s, \quad t \geq 0$$

exists and it is a $\widetilde{\mathbb{F}}$-martingale in $L^2(\widetilde{\Omega}, \widetilde{\mathcal{F}}, \widetilde{P})$.

By the definition of joint measurability and assumption (8.18), there is a sequence of simple integrands

$$\widetilde{H}^{(n)}(s, \widetilde{\omega}) = H^{(n)}(s,\omega,\theta) = \sum_{i=1}^{k_n} h_i^{(n)}(s,\omega) \mathbf{1}(\theta \in A_i^{(n)})$$

where for $A_k^{(n)} \in \mathcal{A}$, and $h_i^{(n)}(s,\omega)$ are $\mathbb{F}$-progressive processes, such that

$$E_{\widetilde{P}} \biggl(\int_0^t \bigl\{ \widetilde{H}^{(n)}(s) - \widetilde{H}(s) \bigr\}^2 d\langle M \rangle_s \biggr) = E_P \biggl(\int_\Theta \int_0^t \bigl\{ H^{(n)}(s,\omega,\theta) - H_s(s,\omega,\theta) \bigr\}^2 d\langle M \rangle_s \alpha(d\theta) \biggr) \longrightarrow 0$$

For example, when $\mathcal{A}$ is countably generated, one can find an increasing sequence of finite measurable partitions of Θ generating a filtrations $\mathcal{A}_n \subseteq \mathcal{A}_{n+1} \uparrow \mathcal{A}$, and take

$$H^{(n)}(s,\omega,\theta) = \sum_{i=1}^{k_n} \mathbf{1}(\theta \in A_i^{(n)}) \, \alpha(A_i^{(n)})^{-1} \int_\Theta \mathbf{1}(\theta \in A_i^{(n)}) H(s,\omega,\theta) \alpha(d\theta)$$

which is the conditional expectation of $H(s,\omega,\theta)$ under the measure $\langle M\rangle(ds,\omega)P(d\omega)\alpha(d\theta)$ with respect to the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_T\otimes\mathcal{B}(0,T)\otimes\mathcal{A}_n$.

Note that by the linearity of Ito integral, the stochastic Fubini's formula (8.21) holds for the simple integrands $H^{(n)}(s,\theta)$. By Jensen inequality

$$\int_0^T\Big(\int_\Theta\big(H^{(n)}(s,\omega,\theta)-H(s,\omega,\theta)\big)\alpha(d\theta)\Big)^2 d\langle M\rangle_s$$
$$\le\int_{[0,T]\times\Theta}\big(H^{(n)}(s,\omega,\theta)-H(s,\omega,\theta)\big)^2\alpha(d\theta)\otimes d\langle M\rangle_s\overset{L^2(P)}{\longrightarrow}0$$

This implies

$$\int_\Theta\Big(\int_0^T H^{(n)}(s,\theta)dB_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta)=$$
$$\int_0^T\Big(\int_\Theta H^{(n)}(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\Big)dB_s\overset{L^2(P)}{\longrightarrow}\int_0^T\Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\Big)dB_s$$

Since

$$\int_0^t\widetilde{H}^{(n)}(s)d\widetilde{M}_s=\int_0^t H^{(n)}(s,\theta)dM_s\longrightarrow\int_0^t\widetilde{H}(s)d\widetilde{M}_s=\int_0^t H(s,\theta)dM_s$$

with convergence in $L^2(\Omega\times\Theta,\mathcal{F}\otimes\mathcal{A},dP\otimes d\alpha)$, by Jensen inequalilty

$$E_P\bigg(\Big\{\int_\Theta\Big(\int_0^t H^{(n)}(s,\theta)dM_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta)-\int_\Theta\Big(\int_0^t H(s,\theta)dM_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta)\Big\}^2\bigg)\le$$
$$E_P\bigg(\int_\Theta\Big\{\int_0^t H^{(n)}(s,\theta)dM_s-\int_0^t H(s,\theta)dM_s\Big\}^2\alpha(d\theta)\Big\}^2\bigg)\longrightarrow 0$$

which means

$$\int_\Theta\Big(\int_0^t H^{(n)}(s,\theta)d\widetilde{M}_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta)\longrightarrow\int_\Theta\Big(\int_0^t H(s,\theta)dM_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta)$$

in $L^2(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$. On the other hand

$$\int_\Theta\Big(\int_0^t H^{(n)}(s,\theta)d\widetilde{M}_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta)=\int_0^t\Big(\int_\Theta H^{(n)}(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\Big)d\widetilde{M}_s\to\int_0^t\Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\Big)d\widetilde{M}_s$$

in $L^2(\Omega,\mathcal{F},P)$, which proofs the stochastic Fubini formula (8.21) under assumption (8.18).

Let's now work under the weaker assumption (8.16). Consider the stopping times

$$\tau_n(\omega):=\inf\Big\{t:\int_\Theta\int_0^t H(s,\theta)^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\alpha(d\theta)<n\Big\}$$

with $\tau_n(\omega)\uparrow\infty$ P a.s.

For every n the stopped process $(M_{s\wedge\tau_n}:t\ge 0)$ and the integrand $H(s,\theta)$ satisfy (8.18). and the stochastic Fubini formula

$$\int_0^{t\wedge\tau_n}\Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\omega,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\Big)dM_s=\int_\Theta\Big(\int_0^{t\wedge\tau_n}H(s,\omega,\theta)dM_s\Big)\alpha(d\theta)$$

holds P almost surely, and by using the telescopic sums representation starting from $\tau_0 = 0$,

$$1 = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mathbf{1}\big(\tau_{n-1}(\omega) \le t < \tau_n(\omega)\big) \ , \tag{8.19}$$

it follows that

$$\int_0^t \Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\omega,\theta)\alpha(d\theta) \Big) dM_s := \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \int_{t\wedge\tau_{n-1}}^{t\wedge\tau_n} \Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\omega,\theta)\alpha(d\theta) \Big) dM_s \tag{8.20}$$

and

$$\int_\Theta \Big(\int_0^{t\wedge\tau_n} H(s,\omega,\theta) dM_s \Big) \alpha(d\theta) := \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \int_\Theta \Big(\int_{t\wedge\tau_{n-1}}^{t\wedge\tau_n} H(s,\omega,\theta) dM_s \Big) \alpha(d\theta)$$

coincide P almost surely, and (8.20) gives a continuous $(P,\mathbb{F})$-local martingale with localizing sequence τ_n □

When $\alpha(d\theta)$ is a σ-finite measure on $(\Theta,\mathcal{A})$, by using a countable measurable partition $\Theta = \bigcup_{k\in\mathbb{N}} \Theta_k$ with $\alpha(\Theta_k) < \infty$ together with convergence in $L^2(P)$ see that the stochastic Fubini theorem holds under (8.18), and for the general version the localization argument applies without changes □.

Remark 23. *This theorem not much discussed in the literature, usually under the assumptions (8.18). See Protter's book Stochastic integration and Differential equations , p 121-122. The following version which is given under weaker assumption is from Jacod's book (Calcul stochastique et problemes the martingales).*

Theorem 34. *Stochastic Fubini theorem, version 2.*

Let $(\Theta,\mathcal{A},\alpha(d\theta))$ be a measurable space, where $\alpha(d\theta)$ is a σ-finite measure, and $H(s,\omega,\theta)$ a jointly measurable process, such that the map $\theta \mapsto H(s,\omega,\theta)$ is $\mathcal{A}$-measurable for each (s,ω) and the map $(s,\omega) \mapsto H(s,\omega,\theta)$ is $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-progressive for each $\theta \in \Theta$.

Assuming that for all t, P-almost surely

$$\int_{[0,t]\times\Theta} \Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\omega,\theta)\alpha(\theta) \Big)^2 d\langle M\rangle_s \otimes \alpha(d\theta) < \infty$$

Then

$$\int_0^t \Big(\int_\Theta H(s,\omega,\theta)\alpha(d\theta) \Big) dM_s = \int_\Theta \Big(\int_0^t H(s,\omega,\theta) dM_s \Big) \alpha(d\theta), \quad P \ a.s$$

is a local martingale which does not depend on the order of integration.

Proof As before, it is enough to consider the case when $\alpha(d\theta)$ is a probability measure.

By linearity we can assume that $H(\theta,s,\omega) \ge 0$, and do the stochastic integration separately for $H(\vartheta,s,\omega)^{\pm}$.

Let τ_n a localizing sequence for M and let

$$H^{(n)}(\theta,s,\omega)=n\wedge H^{(n)}(\theta,s,\omega)\mathbf{1}(\tau_n>s)$$

The sequence $0\le H^{(n)}(\theta,s,\omega)\uparrow H(\theta,s,\omega)$, and for each n, $H^{(n)}(\theta,s,\omega)$ satisfies the assumptions of the 1st version of Fubini theorem, **??**, so that

$$\int_\Theta\biggl(\int_0^t H^{(n)}(\theta,s)dM_s\biggr)\alpha(d\theta)=\int_0^t\biggl(\int_\Theta H^{(n)}(\theta,s)\alpha(d\theta)\biggr)dM_s$$

Now

Let's assume first that

$$E\biggl(\int_0^t\biggl(\int_\Theta H(s,\omega,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\biggr)^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\biggr)<\infty \tag{8.21}$$

and $\forall\theta\in\Theta$

$$E\biggl(\int_0^t H(s,\omega,\theta)^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\biggr)<\infty$$

For $(N_t)\in\mathcal{M}^2$, which is the space of continuous martingales bounded in $L^2(P)$, define the linear functional

$$\phi^\alpha(N):=E\biggl(\int_0^t\biggl\{\int_\Theta H(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\biggr\}d\langle M,N\rangle_s\biggr)=E_P\biggl(\int_\Theta\biggl(\int_0^t H(s,\theta)d\langle M,N\rangle_s\biggr)\alpha(d\theta)\biggr)$$

where the equality follows by polarization and the classical Fubini theorem. By the assumption (**??**), it follows that $\varphi^\alpha(N)$ is a linear continuous functional on the Hilbert space $\mathcal{M}^2$, and by Riesz representation theorem the stochastic integral

$$\bigl(H^\alpha\cdot M\bigr)_t=\int_0^t\biggl\{\int_\Theta H(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\biggr\}dM_s$$

exists, satisfying

$$\phi^\alpha(N)=E_P\Bigl(\bigl(H^\alpha\cdot M\bigr)_\infty N_\infty\Bigr)$$

On the other hand,

$$\int_{0^t}H(\theta,s)dM_s$$

as a martingale with on the product space $\widetilde\Omega=\Omega\times\Theta$ under the product measure $\widetilde P(d\omega\times d\theta)=P(d\omega)\otimes\alpha(d\theta)$ with the filtration $\widetilde F_t=(\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}_t)$ with $\widetilde{\mathcal{F}}_t=\mathcal{F}_t\otimes\mathcal{A}$.

We can identify $\widetilde N_t(\widetilde\omega)=N_t(\omega)$, and identify the space $\mathcal{M}^2$ with $\widetilde{M}^2$, which is the space of continous martingales bounded in $L^2(\widetilde P)$ defined on the product space $\widetilde\Omega$.

We have

$$\varphi^\alpha(N)=\int_{\widetilde\Omega}\int_0^t\widetilde H(s)d\langle\widetilde M,\widetilde N\rangle_s$$

where we mean $\widetilde{H}(s) = \widetilde{H}(\widetilde{\omega}, s) = H(\theta, \omega, s)$ and we identify the martingales $\widetilde{M_t}(\widetilde{\omega}) = M_t(\omega)$.

Therefore there exist a martingale $\big(\widetilde{H} \cdot \widetilde{M}\big)_t$ in $\mathcal{M}^2$ such that

$$E_{P\otimes\alpha}\bigg(\big(\widetilde{H} \cdot \widetilde{M}\big)_\infty \widetilde{N}_\infty\bigg) = \varphi^\alpha(N)$$

We interpret $\big(\widetilde{H} \cdot \widetilde{M}\big)_t$ in $\mathcal{M}^2$ as a martingale which is $\mathcal{A} \otimes \mathcal{F}_t$ measurable with respect to (θ, ω). Define

$$\varphi_\theta(N) := E\bigg(\int_0^\infty H(s,\theta) d\langle M, \rangle_s\bigg)$$

by the classical Fubini theorem

$$\phi^\alpha(N) := E\bigg(\int_0^t \bigg\{\int_\Theta H(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\bigg\} d\langle M, N\rangle_s\bigg) =$$
$$\int_\Theta E\bigg(\int_0^t H(s,\theta) d\langle M, N\rangle_s\bigg)\alpha(d\theta) = \int_\Theta \phi_\theta(N)\alpha(d\theta)$$

where the classical Fubini theorem applies since

$$E\bigg(\int_0^t \bigg|\int_\Theta H(s,\theta)\alpha(d\theta)\bigg| \, |d\langle M, N\rangle_s|\bigg)\bigg) \le E\bigg(\int_0^t \bigg\{\int_\Theta |H(s,\theta)|\alpha(d\theta)\bigg\}^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\bigg)^{1/2} E\big(\langle N\rangle_t\big)^{1/2} < \infty$$

By the defining property of the Ito integral.

Proposition 33. *Gaussian integration by parts formula. If $G(\omega) \sim \mathcal{N}(0,1)$ is centered Gaussian and $f(x) = f(0) + \int_0^t f'(y)dy$ is absolutely continuous such that both $(f'(G) - f(G)G)$ and $f(G)$ are in $L^1(P)$. Then*

$$E_P\big(f(G)G\big) = E_P\big(f'(G)\big)$$

Proof We recall that the standard Gaussian density $\gamma(x)$, satisfies $\gamma'(x) = -x\gamma(x)$ Integrating by parts, for all $a \le b \in \mathbb{R}$

$$f(b)\gamma(b) - f(a)\gamma(a) = \int_a^b (f'(y) - f(y)y)\gamma(y)dy$$

If $f(x)$ is compactly supported, the left-hand side equals zero for $|a|$ and $|b|$ large. As $a \to -\infty$ and $b \to +\infty$ the left hand side converges to $E_P\big(f'(G) - f(G)G\big)$.

More in general we approximate $f(x)$ with a sequence of compactly supported functions. Let $k_n(x) = (1 - |x|/n)^+$. We have $0 \le k_n(x) \le 1$, $\frac{d}{dx}k_n(x) = -n^{-1}\text{sign}(x)bf1(|x| \le n)$, and $\lim_{n\to\infty} k_n(x) = x$, $\forall x \in \mathbb{R}$.

Let $f_n(x) = f(x)k_n(x)$.

$$0 = E(f_n'(G) - f_n(G)G) = E((f'(G) - F(G)G)k_n(G)) + E(f(G)k_n'(G))$$

where we used the chain rule of differentiation. Since $|(f'(G) - F(G)G)k_n(G)| \le (f'(G) - F(G)G) \in L^1(P)$, by Lebesgue' dominated convergence theorem

$$E((f'(G) - F(G)G)k_n(G)) \to E(f'(G) - F(G)G)$$

and $E(|f(G)k_n'(G)|) \le n^{-1}E(|f(G)|) \to 0$

Example the maximum process

Let B_t be a standard Brownian motion starting from zero, $\mathcal{F}_t^B = \sigma(B_s : 0 \le s \le t)$. Define

$$B_t^* = \sup_{0\le s\le t}\{B_s\},$$
$$H_a = \inf\big\{t > 0 : B_t \ge a\big\}$$

respectively the running maximum and the first hitting time of level $a > 0$

Proposition 34. *For $a > 0$, by the reflection principle*

$$P(H_a \le \ell) = P(B_\ell^* \ge a) = 2P(B_\ell > a) = 2\big(1 - \Phi(a/\sqrt{\ell})\big)$$

where $\Phi(x) = P(B_1 \le x)$.

By differentiating with respect to ℓ we obtain the probability density of the hitting time H_a

$$\frac{P(H_a \in d\ell)}{d\ell} = p_{H_a}(\ell) =$$
$$(2\pi)^{-1/2}\exp\left(-\frac{a^2}{2\ell}\right)a\,\ell^{-3/2}\,\mathbf{1}(\ell > 0), \qquad a > 0$$

Moreover

$$P(B_\ell^{\ge} a, B_\ell \in dx) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\ell}}\gamma\left(\frac{a + |x-a|}{\sqrt{\ell}}\right)dx \tag{8.22}$$

Proof We define a Brownian motion reflected after H_a

$$\widetilde{B}_t = \begin{cases} B_t & , t \le H_a \\ 2a - B_t & t > H_a \end{cases}$$

with representation

$$\widetilde{B}_t = \int_0^t \Big(\mathbf{1}(s \le H_a) - \mathbf{1}(s > H_a)\Big)dB_s$$

where the integrand is bounded anb adapted since H_a is a $(\mathcal{F}_t^B)$-stopping time Since

$$\langle \widetilde{B}\rangle_t = \int_0^t \Big(\mathbf{1}(s \le H_a) - \mathbf{1}(s > H_a)\Big)^2 ds = t$$

by Lévy characterization it follows that $\widetilde{B}_t$ is a Brownian motion.

By drawing a figure we see that

$$\{B_\ell^* \ge a\} = \{B_\ell \ge a\} \cup \{\widetilde{B}_\ell \ge a\}$$

where $\{B_\ell \ge a\} \cap \{\widetilde{B}_\ell \ge a\} = \emptyset$

$$P\big(B_\ell^* \ge a\big) = P\big(\{B_\ell \ge a\} \cup \{\widetilde{B}_\ell \ge a\}\big)$$
$$= P\big(B_\ell \ge a\big) + P\big(\widetilde{B}_\ell \ge a\big) =$$
$$2P\big(B_\ell \ge a\big) = 2\big(1 - \Phi(a/\sqrt{\ell})\big) = 2\Phi(-a/\sqrt{\ell})$$

where $\Phi(x)$ is the cumulative distribution function of a standard Gaussian r.v.

By the same argument

$$P(B^*_\ell \geq a, B_\ell \in dx) = P(B^*_\ell \geq a, \widetilde{B}_\ell \in dx) = P(B^*_\ell \geq a, 2a - B_\ell \in dx)$$

now there are two case either $x \geq a$ or $x < a$. When $x \geq a$

$$\frac{P(B^*_\ell \geq a, B_\ell \in dx)}{dx}(x) = \frac{P(B_\ell \in dx)}{dx}(x)$$

otherwise $2a - x > a$. and

$$\frac{P(B^*_\ell \geq a, B_\ell \in dx)}{dx}(x) = \frac{P(B_\ell \in dx)}{dx}(2a - x)$$

In both cases this gives formula (8.22).

8.4 Barrier option in Black and Scholes model

Consider the Black and Scholes model for a risky asset and a riskless bond.

$$\begin{aligned} S_t &= S_0 \exp\Big(\int_0^t \sigma_s dB_s + \int_0^t (\mu_t - \frac{\sigma_t^2}{2}) dt\Big), \\ U_t &= U_0 \exp\Big(\int_0^t \rho_s ds\Big) \\ S_0 &> 0,\ U_0 > 0 \\ dS_t &= S_t(\mu_t dt + \sigma_t dB_t), \quad dU_t = U_t \rho_t dt \end{aligned}$$

here μ_t, σ_t, U_t are adapted to the Brownian filtration $\mathcal{F}^B_t$.

Denote the discounted process

$$\widetilde{S}_t = \frac{S_t}{U_t} = \widetilde{S}_0 \exp\Big(\int_0^t \sigma_s dB_s + \int_0^t (\mu_t - \rho_t - \frac{\sigma_t^2}{2}) dt\Big)$$

satisfying

$$d\widetilde{S}_t = \widetilde{S}_t\big(\sigma_t dB_t + (\mu_t - \rho_t) dt\big)$$

Denote

$$\widetilde{B}_t := B_t + \int_0^t \frac{(\mu_s - \rho_s)}{\sigma_s} ds = \int_0^t (\widetilde{S}_s \sigma_s)^{-1} d\widetilde{S}_u$$

We want to represent the discounted value of the option $\widetilde{F}(\omega) := F(\omega)(S_T(\omega))^{-1}$ as a stochastic integral with respect to the discounted stock $\widetilde{S}_t$, which is also a stochastic integral with respect $\widetilde{B}_t$. However $\widetilde{B}_t$ is not Brownian motion under the measure P since it has a drift.

In order to use the Ito representation theorem we must first change the measure in order to kill the drift of $\widetilde{B}_t$, which becomes a Brownian motion under the new measure Q.

$$E_P(f(B_T)\mathbf{1}(B_T^* > a)) = \int_{\mathbb{R}} f(x)\frac{1}{\sqrt{T}}\gamma\Big(\frac{a+|x-a|}{\sqrt{T}}\Big)dx$$

$$E_P(f(B_T)\mathbf{1}(B_T^* > a)|\mathcal{F}_t) = E_P(f(B_T)\mathbf{1}(B_T^* > a)|B_t, B_t^*)$$

$$= \mathbf{1}(B_t^* > a)E_P(f(x+\sqrt{T-t}G))\Big|_{x=B_t} + \mathbf{1}(B_t^* \le a)E_P\big(f(x+W_{T-t})\mathbf{1}(W_{T-t}^* > (a-x))\big)\Big|_{x=B_t}$$

$$\mathbf{1}(B_t^* > a)\int_{\mathbb{R}} f(x)\frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}\gamma\Big(\frac{x-B_t}{\sqrt{T-t}}\Big)dx + \mathbf{1}(B_t^* \le a)\int_{\mathbb{R}} f(x)\frac{1}{\sqrt{T-t}}\gamma\Big(\frac{a-B_t+|x-a|}{\sqrt{T-t}}\Big)dx$$

By using Ito formula and stochastic Fubini theorem

$$E_P(f(B_T)\mathbf{1}(B_T^* > a)|\mathcal{F}_t) =$$

$$E_P(f(B_T)\mathbf{1}(B_T^* > a))$$

$$+\int_0^t \mathbf{1}(B_s^* > a)\Big(\int_{\mathbb{R}} f(x)\frac{1}{\sqrt{T-s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{x-B_s}{\sqrt{T-s}}\Big)\frac{x-B_s}{T-s}dx\Big)dB_s$$

$$+\int_0^t \mathbf{1}(B_s^* \le a)\Big(\int_{\mathbb{R}} f(x)\frac{1}{\sqrt{T-s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{a-B_s+|x-a|}{\sqrt{T-s}}\Big)\frac{a-B_s+|x-a|}{T-s}dx\Big)dB_s$$

$$= E_P(f(B_T)\mathbf{1}(B_T^* > a)) + \int_0^t \mathbf{1}(B_s^* > a)\frac{E_P\big(f(B_T)(B_T-B_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big)}{(T-s)}dB_s$$

$$+\int_0^t \mathbf{1}(B_s^* \le a)\frac{E_P\big(f(B_T)(a-B_s+|B_T-a|)|\mathcal{F}_s\big)}{T-s}dB_s$$

We also write the joint law of B_t^*, B_t:

$$P\Big(B_t^* > y, B_t \le x\Big) = P\Big(H_y \le t, (B_t - B_{H_y}) \le (x-y)\Big)$$

$$= \int_0^t \Phi\Big(\frac{x-y}{\sqrt{t-\ell}}\Big)P(H_y \in d\ell)$$

$$= (2\pi)^{-1/2}\int_0^t \Phi\Big(\frac{x-y}{\sqrt{t-\ell}}\Big)\exp\Big(-\frac{y^2}{2\ell}\Big)y\,\ell^{-3/2}\,d\ell =$$

$$\int_0^t \Phi\Big(\frac{x-y}{\sqrt{t-\ell}}\Big)\frac{1}{\sqrt{\ell}}\gamma\Big(\frac{y}{\sqrt{\ell}}\Big)\frac{y}{\ell}d\ell$$

and the joint density is given by

$$\frac{P(B_t^* \in dy, B_t \in dx)}{dxdy} = -\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y}P\Big(B_t^* > y, B_t \le x\Big)$$

$$= \int_0^t \frac{1}{\sqrt{t-\ell}}\gamma\Big(\frac{x-y}{\sqrt{t-\ell}}\Big)\frac{1}{\sqrt{\ell}}\gamma\Big(\frac{y}{\sqrt{\ell}}\Big)\frac{1}{\ell}\Big(\frac{y^2}{\ell} - 1 - \frac{y(x-y)}{(t-\ell)}\Big)d\ell$$

By differentiating w.r.t. a we obtain the density of B_ℓ^*:

$$\frac{P(B_\ell^* \in da)}{da} = p_{B_\ell^*}(a) =$$

$$\frac{2}{\sqrt{2\pi\ell}}\exp\Big(-\frac{a^2}{2\ell}\Big)\mathbf{1}(a \ge 0) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{\ell}}\gamma\Big(\frac{a}{\sqrt{\ell}}\Big)\mathbf{1}(a \ge 0)$$

We now compute the regular conditional density given the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_t^B$, $t \geq 0$.

For any bounded measurable function g

$$E_P(g(H_a)|\mathcal{F}_t^B) = g(H_a)\mathbf{1}(H_a \leq t) + E_P(g(H_a)|B_t, H_a > t)\mathbf{1}(H_a > t) =$$
$$g(H_a)\mathbf{1}(H_a \leq t) + E_P(g(t + H_{a-x}))\Big|_{x=B_t} \mathbf{1}(H_a > t)$$

where have derived the Markov property of Brownian motion, and there is a regular version of the conditional probability which up to the stopping time H_a has density

$$M(\ell, t) := \frac{P(H_a \in d\ell|B_t, H_a > t)}{d\ell} = (2\pi)^{-1/2} \exp\Big(-\frac{(B_t - a)^2}{2(\ell - t)}\Big)\frac{(a - B_t)}{(\ell - t)^{3/2}}\mathbf{1}(\ell > t)$$

Note that since the process

$$E_P(g(H_a)|\mathcal{F}_{t\wedge H_a}) = \int_0^\infty M(\ell, t \wedge H_a)g(\ell)d\ell$$

is a martingale for every bounded measurable g, $M(\ell, t \wedge H_a)$ is a martingale for all values $\ell > 0$. We use Ito formula to find the martingale representation with respect to the Brownian motion:

$$dM(\ell, t) = (2\pi)^{-1/2}M(\ell, t)\Big\{(B_t - a)^{-1}dB_t + \frac{3}{2}(\ell - t)^{-1}dt - \frac{(B_t - a)}{(\ell - t)}dB_t - \frac{1}{2(\ell - t)}dt$$
$$-\frac{(B_t - a)^2}{2(\ell - t)^2}dt + \frac{1}{2}\frac{(B_t - a)^2}{(\ell - t)^2}dt - \frac{(B_t - a)}{(\ell - t)(B_t - a)}dt\Big\} =$$
$$M(\ell, t)\Big\{\frac{1}{(B_t - a)} + \frac{(a - B_t)}{\ell - t}\Big\}dB_t = M(\ell, t)F(\ell - t, a - B_t)dB_t$$

We have the stochastic exponential representation

$$M(\ell, t \wedge H_a) = M(\ell, 0)\mathcal{E}\Big(\int_0^\cdot \Big\{\frac{1}{(B_s - a)} + \frac{(a - B_s)}{\ell - s}\Big\}dB_s\Big)_{t\wedge H_a} =$$
$$M(\ell, 0)\exp\Big(\int_0^{t\wedge H_a}\Big\{\frac{1}{(B_s - a)} + \frac{(a - B_s)}{\ell - s}dB_s - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^{t\wedge H_a}\Big\{\frac{1}{(B_s - a)} + \frac{(a - B_s)}{\ell - s}\Big\}^2\Big)$$

Note that the process (B_t^*, B_t) is Markovian:

$$E_P(f(B_\ell^*)|\mathcal{F}_s) = \mathbf{1}(\ell \leq s)f(B_\ell^*) + \mathbf{1}(\ell > s)E_P\big(f(\max\{x, y + W_{\ell-s}^*\sqrt{\ell - s}\})\big)\Big|_{x=B_s^*, y=B_s}$$
$$= \mathbf{1}(\ell \leq s)f(B_\ell^*) + \mathbf{1}(\ell > s)\int_0^\infty f(\max\{B_s^*(\omega), B_s(\omega) + v)\frac{2}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{v}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\Big)dv$$
$$= \mathbf{1}(\ell \leq s)f(B_\ell^*) + \mathbf{1}(\ell > s)\Big\{f(B_s^*)\big(2\Phi\Big(\frac{B_s^* - B_s}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\Big) - 1\big) + \int_{B_s^*}^\infty f(v)\frac{2}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{v - B_s}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\Big)dv\Big\}$$

Assume absolute continuity $f(x) = f(0) + \int_0^x f'(y)dy$.

For $s < \ell$ we use integration by parts obtaining

$$E_P\big(f'(B^*_T)\mathbf{1}(B^*_T > B^*_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) = \int_{B^*_s} f'(v)\frac{2}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{v - B_s}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\Big)dv =$$

$$-f(B^*_s)\frac{2}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{B^*_s - B_s}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\Big) + \int_{B^*_s}^{\infty} f(x)\frac{2}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{v - B_s}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\Big)\Big(\frac{v - B_s}{\ell - s}\Big)dv =$$

$$-f(B^*_s)\frac{2}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\gamma\Big(\frac{B^*_s - B_s}{\sqrt{\ell - s}}\Big) + E_P\bigg(f(B^*_T)\frac{(B^*_T - B_s)}{\ell - s}\mathbf{1}(B^*_T > B^*_s)\bigg|\mathcal{F}_s\bigg)$$

Therefore Ito representation gives

$$\begin{aligned}
&E_P\big(f(B^*_\ell)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) = \\
&E_P(f(B^*_T)) + \int_0^\ell \bigg\{E_P\bigg(f(B^*_\ell)\frac{(B^*_\ell - B_s)}{\ell - s}\mathbf{1}(B^*_\ell > B^*_s)\bigg|\mathcal{F}_s\bigg) \\
&- f(B^*_s)\frac{P(W^*_{\ell-s} \in dv|W_0 = B_s)}{dv}(B^*_s - B_s)\bigg\}dB_s \\
&= E_P(f(B^*_\ell)) + \int_0^T E_P\big(f'(B^*_\ell)\mathbf{1}(B^*_\ell > B^*_s)\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big)dB_s
\end{aligned}$$

where (W_t) is an independent Brownian motion. The last expression holds only when $f(x)$ is absolutely continuous.

Suppose now we want to compute the representation of $f(B_T(\omega), B^*_T(\omega)) \in L^2(P)$ We need to compute the joint conditional laws $P(B_T \in dx, B^*_T \in dy|\mathcal{F}_t) = P(B_T \in dx, B^*_T \in dy|B_t, B^*_t)$.

8.4.1 Lenglart inequalities

Lemma 41. *Let $X_t(\omega) \ge 0$ and $A_t(\omega) \ge 0$ continuous processes adapted with respect to $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$, with $X_0 = 0$, and we assume that A_t is non-decreasing (does not need to be $\mathbb{F}$-adapted) such that for all* **bounded** *stopping times $\tau(\omega)$*

$$E(X_\tau) \le E(A_\tau)$$

We introduce the running maximum $X^*_t(\omega) = \max_{0\le s\le t} X_s(\omega)$.

Then, for **all** *$\mathbb{F}$-stopping times τ, (also unbounded), $\forall \varepsilon, \delta > 0$*

a) $\quad P(X^*_\tau \ge \varepsilon) \le \dfrac{E(A_\tau)}{\varepsilon}$

b) $\quad P(X^*_\tau \ge \varepsilon, A_\tau \le \delta) \le \dfrac{E(A_\tau \wedge \delta)}{\varepsilon}$

c) $\quad P(X^*_\tau \ge \varepsilon) \le \dfrac{E(\delta \wedge A_\tau)}{\varepsilon} + P(A_\tau \ge \delta)$

d) $\quad E_P\Big((X^*_t)^\alpha\Big) \le \dfrac{2-\alpha}{1-\alpha}E_P\big(A^\alpha_t\big), \quad \forall t > 0, \alpha \in (0,1)$

Proof Let τ be a $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time. Define also $\sigma = \inf\{s : X_s > \varepsilon\}$

Note that

$$\varepsilon \mathbf{1}(X^*_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t} \geq \varepsilon) = X_\sigma \mathbf{1}(\sigma \leq t\wedge\tau) = X_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t}\mathbf{1}(X^*_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t} \geq \varepsilon)$$

Taking expectation and using the assumption

$$\varepsilon P\big(X^*_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t} \geq \varepsilon\big) = E\bigg(X_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t}\mathbf{1}(X^*_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t} \geq \varepsilon)\bigg) \leq E\big(X_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t}\big) \leq E\big(A_{\tau\wedge\sigma\wedge t}\big)$$

and as $t \uparrow \infty$ by monotone convergence on the left and right hand side

$$\varepsilon P\big(X^*_\tau \geq \varepsilon\big) = \varepsilon P\big(X^*_{\tau\wedge\sigma} \geq \varepsilon\big) \leq E\big(A_{\tau\wedge\sigma}\big) \leq E\big(A_\tau\big) \ ,$$

which is **a)**. Let $\rho = \inf\{s : A_s > \delta\}$, then **b)** follows:

$$P(X^*_\tau \geq \varepsilon, A_\tau \leq \delta) = P(X^*_{\tau\wedge\rho} \geq \varepsilon) \leq \frac{1}{\varepsilon}E(A_{\tau\wedge\rho}) \leq \frac{1}{\varepsilon}E(A_\tau\wedge\delta) \ ,$$

and since

$$P(X^*_\tau \geq \varepsilon) \leq P(X^*_\tau \geq \varepsilon, A_\tau \leq \delta) + P(A_\tau \geq \delta) \ ,$$

and **c)** follows. To prove **d**), let $F(x) = x^\alpha$. Then by Fubini

$$E\big(F(X^*_t)\big) = \int_0^\infty P\big(X^*_t > x\big)F(dx) \overset{\mathbf{c)}}{\leq} \int_0^\infty \bigg\{\frac{1}{x}E\big(A_t\wedge x\big) + P(A_t \geq x)\bigg\}F(dx)$$
$$\leq \int_0^\infty \bigg\{\frac{1}{x}E\big(A_t\mathbf{1}(A_x \leq x)\big)F(dx) + 2\int_0^\infty P(A_t \geq x)\bigg\}F(dx)$$
$$= E\bigg(A_T\int_{A_T}^\infty \frac{1}{x}F(dx)\bigg) + 2E\big(F(A_t)\big) = \frac{2-\alpha}{1-\alpha}E_P\big(A_t^\alpha\big) \quad \square$$

Corollary 19. *Let M_t a continuous $\mathbb{F}$-local martingale. Then, for any $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time τ*

$$P\bigg(\max_{0\leq s\leq t}|M_s(\omega)| \geq \varepsilon\bigg) \leq \frac{E(\delta\wedge\langle M\rangle_\tau)}{\varepsilon^2} + P(\langle M\rangle_\tau \geq \delta)$$

Proof Let $\tau'_n \uparrow \infty$ be a localizing sequence for the martingale (M_t). Note that also $(\tau'_n\wedge n)$ is a localizing sequence since if $(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ is a true martingale, also the stopped process $(M_{t\wedge\tau_n\wedge n} : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ is a true martingale. This means that we can always choose a localizing sequence of bounded stopping times. Let also $\tau''_n \uparrow$ be a localizing sequence for the local martingale $(M_t^2 - \langle M\rangle_t)$. By choosing $\tau_n = \tau'_n\wedge\tau''_n\wedge n$ we obtain a sequence of stopping Therefore $(M_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ and $(M^2_{t\wedge\tau_n} - \langle M\rangle_{t\wedge\tau_n} : t \in \mathbb{R}^+)$ are true martingales and τ_n is bounded for each n. By Doob optional stopping theorem, for every stopping time σ

$$E(M^2_{\tau_n\wedge\sigma}) = E(\langle M\rangle_{\tau_n\wedge\sigma})$$

By Lenglart's inequality

$$P\bigg(\sup_{0\leq s\leq \tau_n\wedge\sigma}|M_s| \geq \varepsilon\bigg) \leq \frac{1}{\varepsilon^2}E_P\bigg(\langle M\rangle_{\tau_n\wedge\sigma}\bigg)$$

and also

$$P\left(\sup_{0\le s\le \tau_n\wedge\sigma}|M_s|\ge\varepsilon\right)\le\frac{1}{\varepsilon^2}E_P\left(\langle M\rangle_{\tau_n\wedge\sigma}\wedge\delta\right)+P(\langle M\rangle_{\tau_n\wedge\sigma}\ge\delta)$$

and as $\tau_n\uparrow\infty$ for $n\uparrow\infty$, by monotone convergence we get

$$P\left(\sup_{0\le s\le\sigma}|M_s|\ge\varepsilon\right)\le\frac{1}{\varepsilon^2}E_P\left(\langle M\rangle_{\sigma}\right)$$
$$P\left(\sup_{0\le s\le\sigma}|M_s|\ge\varepsilon\right)\le\frac{1}{\varepsilon^2}E_P\left(\langle M\rangle_{\sigma}\wedge\delta\right)+P(\langle M\rangle_{\sigma}\ge\delta)$$

Corollary 20. *Let* $\{M_t^{(n)}(\omega)\}_{n\in\mathbb{N}}$ *be a sequence of* $\mathbb{F}$*-local martingales and* τ *a* $\mathbb{F}$*-stopping time. Then*

$$\langle M^{(n)}\rangle_\tau\overset{P}{\to}0\quad\Longrightarrow\quad\max_{0\le s\le\tau}|M_s(\omega)|\overset{P}{\to}0$$

with convergence in probability.

8.4.2 Burkholder Davis Gundy inequality

The following inequalities extends the Doob martingale inequality from $L^2(P)$ to $L^q(P)$, $\forall 0<q<\infty$.

Chapter 9

Stochastic differential equations

Given a Brownian motion (B_t) we look for a stochatic process $(X_t : t \in [s,T])$ such that

$$X_t = \eta + \int_s^t b(u, X_u)du + \int_s^t \sigma(u, X_u)dB_u \quad 0 \le s \le t \tag{9.1}$$

with $\eta(\omega)$ $\mathcal{F}_s^B$-measurable. If such process exists and it is adapted to the $(\mathcal{F}_t^B)$ we say that it is a *strong solution* of the stochastic differential equation (9.2) In differential notation we write

$$dX_t = b(t, X_t)dt + \sigma(t, X_t)dB_t, \quad t \ge s \tag{9.2}$$

with initial condition $X_s(\omega) = \eta(\omega)$.

9.0.1 Generator of a diffusion

Lemma 42. *Assume that the SDE 9.2 has a strong solution and that $\varphi(t,x) \in C^{1,2}(\mathbb{R}^+ \times R^m; \mathbb{R})$. Then*

$$d\varphi(t, X_t) = \frac{\partial \varphi(t, X_t)}{\partial x} dX_t + \frac{1}{2}\frac{\partial^2 \varphi(t, X_t)}{\partial x^2} d\langle X\rangle_t + \frac{\partial \varphi(t, X_t)}{\partial t} dt =$$
$$\frac{\partial \varphi(t, X_t)}{\partial x}\sigma(t, X_t)dB_t + \left\{ \frac{\partial \varphi(t, X_t)}{\partial x} b(t, X_t) + \frac{1}{2}\frac{\partial^2 \varphi(t, X_t)}{\partial x^2}\sigma(t, X_t)^2 + \frac{\partial \varphi(t, X_t)}{\partial t} \right\} dt$$

Define the space-time generator operator

$$(L_t\phi)(t, x) = b(t, x)\frac{\partial \varphi(t, x)}{\partial x} + \frac{1}{2}\sigma(t, x)^2 \frac{\partial^2 \varphi(t, x)}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial \varphi(t, x)}{\partial t}$$

It follows that

$$M_t(\varphi) := \varphi(t, X_t) - \varphi(0, X_0) - \int_0^t (L_s\varphi)(s, X_s)ds = \int_0^t \frac{\partial \varphi(s, X_s)}{\partial x}\sigma(s, X_s)dB_s$$

is a continuous local martingale with $M_0(\varphi) = 0$*, such that for any local martingale* (N_t)

$$\langle M(\varphi), N\rangle_t = \int_0^t \frac{\partial\varphi(s, X_s)}{\partial x}\sigma(s, X_s)d\langle B, N\rangle_s$$

In particular for another $\psi(t, x) \in C^{2,1}$

$$\langle M(\varphi), M(\psi)\rangle_t = \int_0^t \frac{\partial\varphi(s, X_s)}{\partial x}\frac{\partial\psi(s, X_s)}{\partial x}\sigma(s, X_s)^2 ds$$

Exercise 19. *Using the definition show that*

$$\langle M(\varphi), M(\psi)\rangle_t = \int_0^t (L_s(\varphi\psi) - \varphi L_s\psi - \psi L_s\varphi)(s, X_s)ds$$

Hint: By polarization it is enough to consider the case $\psi(t, x) = \varphi(t, x)$ *For simplicity you can consider the time-homogeneous case with* $\sigma(t, x) = \sigma(x)$ $b(t, x) = b(x)$ *and* $\varphi(t, x) = \varphi(x)$*.*

Note that by construction for $H(s, \omega)$ progressively measurable the Ito integral $X_t = (H \cdot B)_t = \int_0^t H_s dB_s$ is the continuous local martingale (unique up to indistinguishability) such that

$$\langle (H \cdot B), M\rangle_t = \int_0^t H_s d\langle B, M\rangle_s$$

for any local martingale (M_t). This implies that for another progressively measurable $K(s, \omega)$

$$Y_t := (K \cdot X)_t = \int_0^t K_s dX_s = \int_0^t K_s H_s dB_s = ((KH) \cdot B)_t$$

since for any local martingale (M_t)

$$\langle Y, M\rangle_t = \int_0^t K_s d\langle X, M\rangle_s =$$
$$\int_0^t K_s H_s d\langle B, M\rangle = \big\langle ((KH) \cdot B), M\big\rangle_t$$

since this associative property holds for Lebesgue Stieltjes integrals.

9.0.2 Stratonovich integral

Let M_t be a continuous local martingale and X_t a semimartingale. We define the *Stratonovich integral* as

$$\int_0^t X_s \circ dM_s = \int_0^t X_s dM_s + \frac{1}{2}[X, M]_t$$

The idea is that the Ito integral corresponds with the forward integral which is the limit in probability of the approximating Riemann sums

$$\int_0^t X_s d^- M_s = (P) \lim_{\Delta(\Pi)\to 0} \sum_{t_i \in \Pi} X_{t_i}(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t})$$

This corresponds adapted piecewise constant approximating integrands

$$X_s^- = X_{t_i} \qquad \text{when } s \in (t_i, t_{i+1}]$$

The choice

$$X_s^+ = X_{t_{i+1}} \qquad \text{when } s \in (t_i, t_{i+1}]$$

does not give necessarily an adapted integrand. Nevertheless it is clear that since

$$X_{t_{i+1}}(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t}) = X_{t_i}(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t}) + (X_{t_{i+1}} - X_{t_i})(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t}) =$$

necessarily the backward integral

$$\int_0^t X_s d^+ M_s = (P) \lim_{\Delta(\Pi)\to 0} \sum_{t_i \in \Pi} X_{t_{i+1}}(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t}) = \int_0^t X_s d^- M_s + [X, M]_t$$

is also well defined.

The Stratonovich integral is approximated by picking the middle point

$$X_s^\circ = X_{(t_i+t_{i+1})/2} \qquad \text{when } s \in (t_i, t_{i+1}]$$

We have

$$\begin{aligned}
&\sum_{t_i\in\Pi} X_{(t_i+t_{i+1})/2}(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t}) = \\
&\sum_{t_i\in\Pi} X_{t_i}(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t}) + \sum_{t_i\in\Pi} (X_{(t_i+t_{i+1})/2} - X_{t_i})(M_{(t_i+t_{i+1})/2\wedge t} - M_{t_i\wedge t}) \\
&+ \sum_{t_i\in\Pi} (X_{(t_i+t_{i+1})/2} - X_{t_i})(M_{t_{i+1}\wedge t} - M_{(t_i+t_{i+1})/2\wedge t}) \\
&\stackrel{P}{\to} \int_0^t X_s d^- M_s + \frac{1}{2}[M, X]_t + 0
\end{aligned}$$

as $\Delta(\Pi) \to 0$

Therefore

$$\int_0^t X_s \circ dM_s = \frac{1}{2}\left(\int_0^t X_s d^- M_s + \int_0^t X_s d^+ M_s\right)$$

the Stratonovich integral is the average of forward integral and a backward integral.

Note the Stratonovich integral obeys the law of standard calculus. Assuming for simplicity that $f \in C^3$, By Ito formula,

$$f(M_t) = f(M_0) + \int_0^t f'(M_s) d^- M_s + \frac{1}{2} f''(M_s) d\langle M\rangle_s = f(M_0) + \int_0^t f'(M_s) \circ dM_s$$

since

$$\langle f'(M), M\rangle_t = \left\langle \int_0^\cdot f''(M_s) dM_s, M \right\rangle_t = \int_0^t f''(M_s) d\langle M, M\rangle_s$$

9.0.3 Doss-Sussman explicit solution of a SDE

In the one-dimenstional case, sometimes we are able to proceed as follows:

Consider the SDE in Stratonovich sense

$$\begin{aligned}&dX_t = b(X_t)dt + \sigma(X_t) \circ dW_t\\&= b(X_t)dt + \sigma(X_t)dW_t + \frac{1}{2}d\langle \sigma(X), B\rangle_t = \big(b(X_t) + \frac{1}{2}\sigma'(X_t)\sigma(X_t)\big)dt + \sigma(X_t)dW_t\end{aligned}$$

where in the first line the stochastic integral is in Stratonovich sense and on the second line in Ito sense. Here $\sigma'(x) = \frac{d}{dx}\sigma(x)$

We look for a solution of the form $X_t = u(W_t, Y_t)$ for some smooth function $u(x, y)$ and a continous process of finite variation Y_t.

Taking Stratonovich differential we get

$$dX_t = \frac{\partial}{\partial x}u(W_t, Y_t) \circ dW_t + \frac{\partial}{\partial y}u(W_t, Y_t)dY_t$$

which means that

$$\begin{aligned}&\frac{\partial}{\partial x}u(x, y) = \sigma(u(x, y))\\&dY_t = \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial y}u(W_t, Y_t)\right)^{-1} b(u(W_t, Y_t))dt\end{aligned}$$

We get also

$$\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2}u(x, y) = \sigma'(u(x, y))\sigma(u(x, y)), \quad \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y}u(x, y) = \sigma'(u(x, y))\frac{\partial}{\partial y}u(x, y),$$

We impose the additional condition $u(0, y) = y$, from which follows

$$\begin{aligned}&\frac{\partial}{\partial y}u(0, y) = 1,\\&\frac{\partial}{\partial y}u(x, y) = 1 + \int_0^x \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y}u(\xi, y)d\xi = 1 + \int_0^x \frac{\partial}{\partial y}u(\xi, y)\sigma'(u(\xi, y))d\xi =\\&= \exp\left(\int_0^x \sigma'(u(\xi, y))d\xi\right)\end{aligned}$$

Substituting

$$Y_t = Y_0 + \int_0^t \exp\left(-\int_0^{W_s} \sigma'(u(\xi, Y_s))d\xi\right) b(u(W_s, Y_s))ds$$

By solving these ODE we obtain the solution $X_t = u(W_t, Y_t)$.

Example Consider the SDE

$$dX_t = \cos(X_t)dt + X_t \circ dW_t = (\cos(X_t) + \frac{1}{2}X_t)dt + X_t dW_t$$

written respectively with Stratonovich and Ito differentials the ODE

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x}u(x,y) = u(x,y), \quad u(0,y) = y$$

has solution

$$u(x,y) = y\exp(x)$$

and

$$Y_t = Y_0 + \int_0^t \exp(-W_s)\cos(Y_s\exp(W_s))ds$$

The solution is $X_t = Y_t\exp(W_t)$. In fact by using integration by parts,

$$\circ\, dX_t = \exp(W_t)dY_t + Y_t \circ d\exp(W_t)$$
$$\exp(W_t)\exp(-W_t)\cos(Y_t\exp(W_t))dt + Y_t\exp(W_t)\circ dW_t = \cos(X_t)dt + X_t \circ dW_t$$

9.1 Existence and Uniqueness of solutions of SDE

Definition 46. *In a filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \geq 0)$, for $p \geq 1$ let $C_B([0,T], L^p(\Omega))$ the space of $\mathbb{F}$-adapted stochastic processes $X(\omega,t)$ with*

- $X_t \in L^p(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_t, P) \quad \forall t \in [0,T]$
- $\| X \|_{C_B([0,T],L^p)} := \sup_{t\in[0,T]} \| X_t \|_{L^p(\Omega)} < \infty$
- $$\forall t \in [0,T], \quad \lim_{u\to t} E_P\Big(\big|X_t - X_u\big|^p \Big) = 0$$

  i.e. the process is continuous in $L^p(\Omega)$.

If we differentiate formally with respect to the initial condition, assuming smoothness of the coefficient we obtain the SDE

$$\partial_x X_t^x = 1 + \int_s^t \partial_x b(u, X_u^x)\partial_x X_u^x du + \int_s^t \partial_x \sigma(u, X_u^x)\partial_x X_u^x dB_u$$

Consider the system of SDE

$$\begin{cases} X_t^x = x + \int_s^t b(u, X_u^x)du + \int_s^t \partial_x\sigma(u, X_u^x)\partial_x X_u^x dB_u \\ \xi_t^x = 1 + \int_s^t \partial_x b(u, X_u^x)\xi_u^x du + \int_s^t \partial_x\sigma(u, X_u^x)\xi_u^x dB_u \end{cases}$$

If the coefficients $\big(b(s,x), \partial_x b(s,x)\big)$ $\big(\sigma(s,x), \sigma_x b(s,x)\big)$ are jointly continuous and satisy the Lipschitz and linear growth conditions, There exists an unique solution (X_t^x, ξ_t^x).

We show that necessarily

$$\xi_t^x = \lim_{h\to 0}\frac{1}{h}\big(X_t^{x+h} - X_t^x\big) = \partial_x X_t^x$$

indeed

$$X_t^{x+h} - X_t^x - h\partial_x X_t^x =$$
$$\int_s^t \Big(b(u, X_u^{x+h}) - b(u, X^u) - h\partial_x b(u, X_u^x)\xi_u^x \Big) du + \int_s^t \Big(\sigma(u, X_u^{x+h}) - \sigma(u, X^u) - h\partial_x \sigma(u, X_u^x)\xi_u^x \Big) du =$$
$$\int_s^t \partial_x b(u, X_u^x)\big(X_u^{x+h} - X_u^x + h\xi_u^x\big) du + \int_s^t \partial_x \sigma(u, X_u^x)\big(X_u^{x+h} - X_u^x + h\xi_u^x\big) dB_u +$$
$$\int_s^t \big(\partial_x b(u, X_u^*) - \partial_x b(u, X_u^x)\big)\big(X_u^{x+h} - X_u^x\big) du + \int_s^t \big(\partial_x b(u, X_u^*) - \partial_x b(u, X_u^x)\big)\big(X_u^{x+h} - X_u^x\big) du +$$
$$\int_s^t \Big(\sigma(u, X_u^{x+h}) - \sigma(u, X^u) - h\partial_x \sigma(u, X_u^x)\xi_u^x \Big) du = \dots$$

9.2 Cameron-Martin-Girsanov theorem

9.2.1 Discrete time heuristics

Let $(\Delta B_1, \dots, \Delta B_n)$ i.i.d. Gaussian random variable with $E_P(\Delta B_1) = 0$, $E_P(\Delta B_1^2) = \Delta t$, let $\mathcal{F}_n = \sigma(\Delta B_i : i = 1 \dots, n)$.

Consider another measure Q on $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_n)$ such that under Q the ΔB_i are i.i.d. with mean $E_P(\Delta B_i) = H_i \Delta t$ and variance $E_P(\Delta B_1^2) = \Delta t$.

On $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}_n)$ the likelihood ratio factorizes as

$$\frac{dQ\big|\mathcal{F}_n}{dP\big|\mathcal{F}_n} = \prod_{k=1}^n \exp\Big(-\frac{(\Delta B_k - A_k \Delta t)^2}{2\Delta t} + \frac{(\Delta B_k)^2}{2\Delta t} \Big) =$$
$$\exp\Big(\sum_{i=1}^n A_k \Delta B_i - \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^n A_k^2 \Delta t \Big)$$

This extends to the case when under Q the random variables ΔB_k are conditionally Gaussian given $\mathcal{F}_{k-1}$, with

$$E_Q(\Delta B_k | \mathcal{F}_{k-1}) = A_k \Delta t,$$

where A_k is predictable, and

$$E_Q((\Delta B_k)^2 | \mathcal{F}_{k-1}) - A_k^2 \Delta t^2 = \Delta t$$

If $A_k \in L^1(P)$ $\forall k$ then under Q

$$M_k = \sum_{i=1}^k \Delta B_i - \sum_{i=1}^k A_i \Delta t$$

is a Q-martingale with predictable variation $\langle M \rangle_k = \sum_{i=1}^k \Delta t$.

9.2.2 Change of drift in continuous time

We denote by P_t the restriction of P on the σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_t$.

Let (M_t) a continuous $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$-local martingale under the measure P and(H_t) an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$-progressive process such that for all $0 \leq t < +\infty$

$$\int_0^t H_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s < \infty \quad P \text{ almost surely}$$

We want to find a probability measure Q such that

$$\widetilde{M_t} = M_t + \int_0^t H_s d\langle M\rangle_s,$$

is a local martingale with respect to the measure Q and $Q_t \ll P_t \quad \forall t < \infty$. (notation $Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$)

Lemma 43. *Assume that* $Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$. *The likelihood ratio process*

$$Z_t(\omega) := \frac{dQ_t}{dP_t}(\omega) \tag{9.3}$$

is a true martingale with respect to the reference measure P.

Proof For $s < t$, if $A \in \mathcal{F}_s \subseteq \mathcal{F}_t$,

$$Q(A) = E_P(Z_t \mathbf{1}_A) = E_P(Z_s \mathbf{1}_A)$$

which gives the martingale property under P.

Note We recall also that a non-negative local martingale Z_t is a supermartingale, since if $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$ is a localizing sequence, for $s \leq t$ by the Fatou lemma for conditional expectation

$$\begin{aligned} &E_P(Z_t|\mathcal{F}_s) = E_P\big(\liminf_{n\uparrow\infty} Z_{t\wedge\tau_n}\big|\mathcal{F}_s\big) \leq \liminf_{n\uparrow\infty} E_P(Z_{t\wedge\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_s) \\ &\leq \liminf_{n\uparrow\infty} Z_{s\wedge\tau_n} = Z_s \end{aligned}$$

Moreover Z_t is a true martingale if and only if $E_P(Z_t) = 1$, since in such case

$$Z_s - E_P(Z_t|\mathcal{F}_s) \geq 0 \quad \text{ and } E_P(Z_s) = E_P(Z_t) = 1$$

implies $Z_s = E_P(Z_t|\mathcal{F}_s)$ P-almost surely.

Lemma 44. *Let* $Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$ *probability measures on* $(\Omega, \mathcal{F})$ *equipped with the filtration* $\mathbb{F} = \{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ *Then* X_t *is a* Q *(local)-martingale if and only if the product process* $(X_t Z_t)$ *is a* P *(local)-martingale.*

Proof. for $s \leq t$ $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$ we have

$$\begin{aligned} E_Q(X_t \mathbf{1}_A) &= E_P(Z_t X_t \mathbf{1}_A) \\ E_Q(X_s \mathbf{1}_A) &= E_P(Z_s X_s \mathbf{1}_A) \end{aligned}$$

therefore the right hand sides coincide if and only if the left hand sides do.

Moreover if $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$ is a localizing sequence of stopping times, by the abstract Bayes formula,

$$X_{s\wedge\tau_n} = E_Q(X_{t\wedge\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_s) = \frac{E_P\big(Z_{t\wedge\tau_n}X_{t\wedge\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_s\big)}{Z_{s\wedge\tau_n}}$$
$$\iff E_P\big(Z_{t\wedge\tau_n}X_{t\wedge\tau_n}|\mathcal{F}_s\big) = X_{s\wedge\tau_n}Z_{s\wedge\tau_n}$$

where by Doob optional sampling theorem for bounded stopping times

$$E_P(Z_{t\wedge\tau}|\mathcal{F}_{s\wedge\tau}) = Z_{s\wedge\tau} = Z_s\mathbf{1}(\tau > s) + Z_\tau\mathbf{1}(\tau_n \le s) =$$

it is $\mathcal{F}_s$-measurable and coincides with $E_P(Z_{s\wedge\tau}|\mathcal{F}_s)$ □

Theorem 35. *(Cameron-Martin-Girsanov) Let $Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$ probability measure on $(\Omega,\mathcal{F})$ equipped with the filtration $\mathbb{F} = (\mathcal{F}_t : t \ge 0)$, and M_t a continuous $\mathbb{F}$-local martingale such that change of drift formula*

$$\widetilde{M}_t = M_t + \int_0^t H_s d\langle M\rangle_s, \tag{9.4}$$

holds.

By Lemma 43 the likelihood ratio process $Z_t = \frac{dQ_t}{dP_t} > 0$ is a true $(\mathbb{F},P)$-martingale and it has a stochastic logarithm

$$L(t) := \int_0^t \frac{1}{Z(s-)} dZ(s)$$

which is a local martingale such that

$$Z_t = Z_0\mathcal{E}(L)_t = Z_0 + \int_0^t Z(s-)dL(s)$$

By Ito integral representation Theorem 31 it follows that there is a predictable process $H(s)$ and a continuous local martingale Y such that

$$L(t) = Y(t) + \int_0^t H(s)dM(s)$$

and $\langle Y,M\rangle = 0$, which implies that the Doleans stochastic exponential has the multiplicative decompostion

$$\mathcal{E}(L)_t = \mathcal{E}(Y)_t\mathcal{E}\big(H\cdot M\big)_t$$

and

$$Z(t) = \frac{dQ_t}{dP_t} = Z(0)\mathcal{E}(Y)_t \exp\bigg(\int_0^t H_s dM_s - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t H_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\bigg)$$

where $\mathcal{E}(Y)_t > 0$ is a P-martingale with $\mathcal{E}(Y)_0 = 1$ and $[M,\mathcal{E}(Y)]_t = [M,Y]_t = 0\ \forall t$.

We rewrite the the change of drift formula (9.4) as

$$\widetilde{M}_t = M_t - \int_0^t \frac{1}{Z_s} d\langle M,Z\rangle_s$$

In particular when $\mathcal{E}(Y)_t \equiv 1\ \forall t$, the change of measure is minimal, in the sense that $P = Q$ on the initial σ-algebra $\mathcal{F}_0$, and every P-(local) martingale X_t such that $[X,M]_t \equiv 0$ is also a Q-(local) martingale.

Proof. By the assumption and lemma 44, the product $(Z_t\widetilde{M_t})$ is a local martingale under P. Using integration by parts, we obtain the martingale decomposition under Q

$$d(Z_t\widetilde{M_t}) = Z_t dM_t + Z_t H_t d\langle M\rangle_t + M_t dZ_t + d\langle \widetilde{M}, Z\rangle_t =$$
$$\big(Z_t dM_t + M_t dZ_t\big) + \big(Z_t H_t d\langle M\rangle_t + d\langle M, Z\rangle_t\big)$$

which implies

$$\langle M, Z\rangle_t = -\int_0^t Z_s H_s d\langle M\rangle_s$$

This is satisfied if and only if

$$\frac{1}{Z_t} dZ_t = -H_t dM_t + dY_t$$

where Y is a P-local martingale with $\langle M, Y\rangle = 0$.

Let's assume first that $Y_t \equiv 0$.

Then by Ito formula the solution of the linear stochatic differential equation $dZ_t = -Z_t H_t dM_t$ is the exponential martingale

$$Z_t = Z_0\mathcal{E}(H\cdot M)_t = Z_0\mathcal{E}\Big(-\int_0^{\cdot} H_s dM_s\Big)_t :=$$
$$Z_0 \exp\Big(-\int_0^t H_s dM_s - \int_0^t H_s^2 d\langle M\rangle_s\Big)$$

Here $Z_0(\omega) = \frac{dQ_0}{dP_0}(\omega)$ is $\mathcal{F}_0$-measurable.

More in general

$$Z_t = Z_0\mathcal{E}(-H\cdot M + Y)_t = Z_0\mathcal{E}(-H\cdot M)_t\mathcal{E}(Y)_t \quad \square$$

where the stochastic exponential $\mathcal{E}(Y)_t$ satisfies

$$\mathcal{E}(Y)_t = 1 + \int_0^t \mathcal{E}(Y)_s dY_s \ ,$$

and when Y_t is continuous

$$\mathcal{E}(Y)_t = \exp\big(Y_t - \frac{1}{2}\langle Y\rangle_t\big) \ .$$

□

Notes Igor Vladimirovich Girsanov (1934-1965) was a Russian mathematician.

9.3 Kazamaki and Novikov criteria

As we have seen a non-negative local martingale Z is always a supermartingale, and it is a true martingale if and only if $E(Z(t)) = E(Z(0))\ \forall t$. Moreover by Doob martingale convergence theorem $Z(t) \to Z(\infty)$ P-almost surely, and $E(Z_\infty) = E(Z_0)$ if and only if Z is an uniformly integrable martingale.

The question is: if we start from a local martingale M_t when the stochastic exponential

$$Z(t) = \mathcal{E}(M)_t = \exp\bigl(M(t) - \langle M\rangle_t/2\bigr) = Z(0) + \int_0^t Z(s)dM(s)$$

is always a local martingale and a supermartingale, but when can we say that it is also is a true martingale corresponding to a change of measure $Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$, with $Q_t = Q\big|_{\mathcal{F}_t} \ll P_t = P\big|_{\mathcal{F}_t}$ and $Z(t) = dP_t/dQ_t$?

Theorem 36. *(Kazamaki) If $M(t)$ is a continuous local martingale such that*

$$\bigl(\exp(M(t)/2) : t \geq 0\bigr) \qquad \textit{is an uniformly integrable submartingale,}$$

then the Doleans stochastic exponential $Z(t) := \mathcal{E}(M)_t = \exp\bigl(M_t - \langle M\rangle_t/2\bigr)$ is a uniformly integrable martingale.

Proof. We know that $E(Z_\infty) \leq E(Z_0) = Z_0 = 1$ and we need to show that $E(Z_\infty) = E(Z_0) = Z_0 = 1$.

By the characterization of uniform integrability, the assumption means that $\forall \varepsilon > 0\ \exists \delta$ such that for $A \in \mathcal{F}$

$$P(A) < \delta \Longrightarrow \sup_{t\geq 0} E\bigl(\exp(M(t)/2)\mathbf{1}_A\bigr) < \varepsilon$$

For $0 < a < 1$,

$$\begin{aligned}&\mathcal{E}(aM)_t = \exp\bigl(aM(t) - \langle M\rangle_t a^2/2\bigr) = \mathcal{E}(M(t))^{a^2} \exp\bigl(M(t)a(1-a)\bigr)\\ &= \mathcal{E}(M(t))^{a^2} \exp\bigl(M(t)a/(1+a)\bigr)^{1-a^2}\end{aligned}$$

It follows from uniform integrability assumption that $\forall 0 < a < 1$ the family

$$\bigl(\exp(M(t)a/(1+a)) : t \geq 0\bigr)$$

is bounded in L^r with $r = (1+a)/2a) > 1$ and it is also an uniformly integrable submartingale. By the optional stopping theorem for uniformly integrable submartingales it follows that also the family

$$\bigl(\exp(M(\tau)a/(1+a)) : \ \tau \text{ stopping time }\bigr)$$

If τ is a stopping time by Hölder inequality with exponents a^{-2} and $(1-a^2)^{-1}$, if $A \in \mathcal{F}$ with $P(A) < \delta$

$$\begin{aligned}E\bigl(\mathcal{E}(aM)_\tau \mathbf{1}_A\bigr) &\leq \Bigl\{E\bigl(\mathcal{E}(M)_\tau\bigr)\Bigr\}^{a^2} \Bigl\{E\Bigl(\exp\bigl(\frac{a}{1+a}M(\tau)\bigr)\mathbf{1}_A\Bigr)\Bigr\}^{1-a^2}\\ &\leq \Bigl\{E\bigl(\mathcal{E}(M)_\tau\bigr)\Bigr\}^{a^2} \Bigl\{E\Bigl(\exp\bigl(\frac{1}{2}M(\tau)\bigr)\mathbf{1}_A\Bigr)\Bigr\}^{2a(1-a)} \leq \varepsilon^{2a(1-a)},\end{aligned}$$

where in the last line we have used Jensen inequality with conjugate exponents $p = a^{-2}$ and $q = (1-a^2)^{-1}$. Therefore for every $0 < a < 1$ the family

$$\bigl(\mathcal{E}(aM)_\tau : \ \tau \text{ stopping time }\bigr)$$

is uniformly integrable, and this means that we can take the limit of expectation for a localizing sequence and obtain martingale property: for a localizing sequnce τ_n, $s \le t$ and $A \in \mathcal{F}_s$,

$$E\big(\mathcal{E}(aM)_t \mathbf{1}_A\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E\big(\mathcal{E}(aM)_{t\wedge\tau_n}\mathbf{1}_A\big) = \lim_{n\to\infty} E\big(\mathcal{E}(aM)_{s\wedge\tau_n}\mathbf{1}_A\big) = E\big(\mathcal{E}(aM)_s\mathbf{1}_A\big)$$

Note that in general if $(X_t : t \ge 0)$ is an uniformly integrable local martingale, it is not guaranteed that the family

$$\big(X(\tau) : \ \tau \text{ bounded stopping time }\big)$$

is uniformly integrable, which is what we need to take limit in the localization to obtain the martingale property from the local martingale property.

Resuming, for any $0 < a < 1$, $(\mathcal{E}(aM)_t : t \ge 0)$ is an uniformly integrable martingale, and by Hölder inequality

$$1 = E\big(\mathcal{E}(aM)_\tau\big) \le \Big\{E\big(\mathcal{E}(M)_\tau\big)\Big\}^{a^2} \Big\{E\Big(\exp\big(\frac{1}{2}M(\tau)\big)\Big)\Big\}^{2a(1-a)}$$

by taking limits for $a \uparrow 1$,

$$1 \le E\big(\mathcal{E}(M)_\tau\big)$$

which is the inequality we needed to show that $(\mathcal{E}(M)_t : t \ge 0)$ is an uniformly integrable martingale. □

Lemma 45. *Let M be a continuous local martingale and $\tau(\omega) \le T < \infty$ a bounded stopping time. Then*

$$E\big(\exp(M_\tau/2)\big) \le \sqrt{E\Big(\exp\big(\langle M\rangle_\tau/2\big)\Big)}$$

Proof.

$$\exp\big(M_\tau/2\big) = \sqrt{Z_\tau \exp\big(\langle M\rangle_\tau/2\big)}$$

and by the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality

$$E\big(\exp(M_\tau/2)\big) \le \sqrt{E(Z_\tau)E\big(\exp\big(\langle M\rangle_\tau/2\big)\big)}$$

with $E(Z_\tau) \le 1$ by Doob optional sampling theorem, since $Z(t)$ is a non-negative local martingale, non-negative local martingales are supermartingales, and $Z(0) = 1$. □

Corollary 21. *(Novikov criterium) Let $M(t)$ be a continuous local martingale such that*

$$E\big(\exp\big(\langle M\rangle_\infty/2\big)\big) < \infty$$

then $Z(t) = \mathcal{E}(M)_t$ is an uniformly integrable martingale.

Proof. It follows from Novikov assumption that $\langle M\rangle_\infty$ has moments of all order, which implies that the local martingale M is in fact an uniformly integrable martingale, since for any stopping time τ, and a localizing sequence of bounded stopping times,

$$E(M_\tau^2) \le \liminf_n E\big(M^2_{\tau\wedge\tau_n}\big) = \liminf_n E(\langle M\rangle_{\tau\wedge\tau_n}) = E(\langle M\rangle_\tau) \le E(\langle M\rangle_\infty) < \infty$$

which shows that the family $\big(M_\tau : \tau \text{ is a stopping time }\big)$ is bounded in L^2 and therefore uniformly integrable, and we can pass to the limit under localization to obtain the martingale property for M (this argument would not work in the case when $E(\langle M\rangle_\infty) = \infty$).

Therfore M is an uniformly integrable martingale, by Jensen inequality $\exp(M_t/2)$ is a submartingale, and proceeding as in Lemma 45, if $A \in \mathcal{F}$

$$E\big(\exp\big(M_t/2)\mathbf{1}_A)\big)\big) \le \sqrt{E\Big(\exp\big(\langle M\rangle_\infty/2\big)\mathbf{1}_A\Big)} < \varepsilon$$

for $P(A)$ small enough, since

$$\sqrt{E\Big(\exp\big(\langle M\rangle_\infty/2\big)\Big)} < \infty\ ,$$

which shows that $\big(\exp(M_t/2) : t \ge 0\big)$ is an uniformly integrable submartingale and Kazamaki criterium applies. ☐

Corollary 22. *For a continuous local martingale M, a) $\Longrightarrow$ b) $\Longleftrightarrow$ c) $\Longrightarrow$ d) , where*

a) $\forall t > 0$

$$E\big(\exp\big(\langle M\rangle_t/2\big)\big) < \infty\ ,$$

b) $\forall t > 0$

$$\sup_{\tau \text{ stopping time}} E\big(\exp\big(M_{\tau\wedge t}/2\big)\big) < \infty\ ,$$

c) The process $\big(\exp\big(M_t/2\big) : t \ge 0\big)$ *is a submartingale.*

d) $Z_t = \mathcal{E}(M)_t = \exp\big(M_t - \langle M\rangle_t/2\big)$ *is a true martingale, and* $dQ_t = Z_t dP_t \ll dP_t$ $\forall t > 0$ *defines a probability measure* $Q \overset{loc}{\ll} P$ *on* $\mathcal{F}_\infty$ *(but not necessarily* $Q \ll P$*).*

BMO martingales

Definition 47. *A continuous uniformly integrable martingale M with $M_0 = 0$ is in the Bounded Mean Oscillation (BMO) class*

$$\| M \|_{BMO} := \operatorname{ess\,sup}_\tau \sqrt{E\big(\langle M\rangle_\infty - \langle M\rangle_\tau \big| \mathcal{F}_\tau\big)} < \infty$$

where we take the essential supremum over all stopping times τ.

This is a generalization of the concept of *BMO functions in analysis*, where for a measurable function $f : \mathbb{R}^d \to \mathbb{R}$

$$\| f \|_{BMO} = \sup_Q \frac{1}{|Q|} \int_Q |f(x) - f_Q| dx, \quad f_Q = \frac{1}{|Q|} \int_Q f(x) dx$$

and the supremum is taken over all cubes $Q \subset \mathbb{R}^d$, $|Q|$ denoting the volume.

Theorem 37. *(Kazamaki) If M is a continuous BMO martingale, then its Doleans exponential $\mathcal{E}(M)$ is an uniformly integrable martingale.*

Proof. $M \in BMO$ implies that $E(\langle M \rangle_\infty) < \infty$ and $\mathcal{E}(M)_t > 0$ at all t. If τ is an $\mathbb{F}$-stopping time,

$$\frac{\mathcal{E}(M)_\infty}{\mathcal{E}(M)_\tau} = \exp\Big(M_\infty - M_\tau - \big(\langle M \rangle_\infty - \langle M \rangle_\tau \big)/2 \Big)$$

and by Jensen inequality

$$\begin{aligned} E\big(\mathcal{E}(M)_\infty \big| \mathcal{F}_\tau\big) \geq & \mathcal{E}(M)_\tau \exp\Big(E(M(\infty)) - E(M(\tau)) - E\big(\langle M \rangle_\infty - \langle M \rangle_\tau \big)/2 \Big) \\ \geq & \mathcal{E}(M)_\tau \exp\big(- \| M \|_{BMO}^2 /2 \big) \end{aligned}$$

By taking expectation, since $E(\mathcal{E}(M)_\infty) \leq 1$, we obtain

$$\sup_{\tau \text{ stopping time}} E\big(\mathcal{E}(M)_\tau\big) \leq \exp\big(\| M \|_{BMO}^2 /2 \big) ,$$

which shows that $\mathcal{E}(M)_t$ is uniformly integrable. □

9.4 Stochastic filtering

Lemma 46. *Let M_t be a continuous local martingale under P with respect to a filtration $(\mathcal{G}_t)_{t \geq 0}$, and assume that (M_t) is adapted to a smaller filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t)_{t \geq 0}$, with $\mathcal{F}_t \subseteq \mathcal{G}$.*

Then M_t is also a $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-local martingale.

Proof Let $\tau_n = \inf\{t : |M_t| \geq n\}$. Since M_t is $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-adapted, τ_n are stopping times in the $(\mathcal{F}_t)$- filtration, with $\tau_n \uparrow \infty$, and we know that for each n, the stopped process $M_t^{\tau_n} = M_{t \wedge \tau_n}$ is a true $(\mathcal{G}_t)$-martingale since it is bounded, which means that in particular for $0 \leq s \leq t$ $\forall A \in \mathcal{G}_s$

$$E_P\big((M_{t \wedge \tau_n} - M_{s \wedge \tau_n}) \mathbf{1}_A \big) = 0$$

But this holds in particular $\forall A \in \mathcal{F}_s$, which means that $(M_t^{\tau_n})_{t \geq 0}$ is a true $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-martingale.

Note Without the continuity assumption we are not able to to produce a localizing sequence of $(\mathcal{F}_t)$-stopping times, just knowing that there is a localizing sequence of $(\mathcal{G}_t)$-stopping times.

Lemma 47. *Let (B_t) be a Brownian motion with the martingale property in the filtration $(\mathcal{G}_t)$ and obviously also with respect to the smaller filtration $(\mathcal{F}_t^B) \subseteq (\mathcal{G}_t)$ generated by itself.*

Let $H(s,\omega)$ a $(\mathcal{G}_t)$-adapted process which is not necessarily $(\mathcal{F}_t^B)$-adapted, such that

$$\int_0^t E_P(H_s^2)ds < \infty$$

Then

$$E_P\left(\int_0^t H_s dB_s \middle| \mathcal{F}_t^B\right) = \int_0^T E_P(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s^B)dB_s$$

Moreover if M_t is a $(\mathcal{G}_t)$-martingale with $\langle M, B\rangle_s = 0$, $\forall 0 \le s \le t$ then

$$E_P\big(M_t - M_0\big|\mathcal{F}_t^B\big) = 0$$

Proof Let $A \in \mathcal{F}_t^B$. By the Ito-Clarck representation theorem

$$\mathbf{1}_A = P(A) + \int_0^t K_s dB_s$$

for some $K \in L^2([0,t] \times \Omega)$ adapted to $(\mathcal{F}_t^B)$.

$$E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \int_0^t H_s dB_s\right) = P(A)E_P\left(\int_0^t H_s dB_s\right) + E_P\left(\int_0^t K_s dB_s \int_0^t H_s dB_s\right)$$

$$= 0 + E_P\Big(\langle K\cdot B, H \cdot B\rangle_t\Big) = E_P\left(\int_0^t K_s H_s ds\right) =$$

$$\int_0^t E_P(K_s H_s)ds = \int_0^t E_P\big(K_s E_P(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s)\big)ds$$

$$= E_P\left(\left\langle \int_0^\cdot K_s dB_s, \int_0^\cdot E_P(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s)dB_s\right\rangle_t\right)$$

$$= 0 + E_P\left(\int_0^t K_s dB_s \int_0^t E_P(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s)dB_s\right) = E_P\left(\mathbf{1}_A \int_0^t E_P(H_s|\mathcal{F}_s)dB_s\right) =$$

where we used the Ito isometry and the definition of conditional expectation □

For the second part of the lemma, if $M_0 = 0$, $\langle M, B\rangle_s = 0$, $s \le t$, $A \in \mathcal{F}_t^B$ as before,

$$E_P((M_t - M_0)\mathbf{1}_A) = P(A)E_P(M_t - M_0) + E_P((M_t - M_0)\int_0^t K_s dB_s) =$$

$$0 + E_P\left(\int_0^t K_s d\langle M, B\rangle_s\right) = 0$$

which means $E_P(M_t - M_0|\mathcal{F}_t^B) = 0$ □

Consider the stochastic filtering settings in the St Flour lecture notes by E Pardoux :

$$dX_s = b(s,Y,X_s)ds + f(s,Y,X_s)dV_s + g(s,Y,X_s)dW_s$$
$$dY_s = h(s,Y,X_s)ds + dW_s$$

with (V, W) are independent P-Brownian motions and consider the filtration $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ with $\mathcal{F}_t = \mathcal{F}_t^{V,W,}$ and $\{\mathcal{Y}_t\}$ with $\mathcal{Y}_t = \mathcal{F}_t^Y$.

Here X_t is the state process, and the problem is to estimate "on-line" X_t using the information from the observation filtration $\{\mathcal{Y}_t\}$ which gives in noisy observations of the signals $h(s, Y, X_s)$.

For simplicity, it is assumed all all coefficient processes are bounded and Lipshitz.

We introduce a reference measure Q under which

$$dX_s = \{b(s, Y, X_s) - h(s, Y, X_s)g(s, Y, X_s)\}ds + f(s, Y, X_s)dV_s + g(s, Y, X_s)dY_s$$

and Y is a Brownian motion w.r.t Q in the $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ filtration. It follows that $P_t \ll Q_t$ with

$$Z_t := \frac{dP_t}{dQ_t} = \exp\biggl(\int_0^t h(s, Y, X_s)dY_s - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t h(s, Y, X_s)^2 ds \biggr)$$

satisfying the linear SDE $dZ_t = Z_t h(t, Y, X_t)dY_t$.

For a function $\varphi \in C_B^2$, bounded and with bounded derivatives, by abstract Bayes formula

$$\pi_t(\varphi) := E_P(\varphi(X_t)|\mathcal{Y}_t) = \frac{E_Q(\varphi(X_t)Z_t|\mathcal{Y}_t)}{E_Q(Z_t|\mathcal{Y}_t)} = \frac{\sigma_t(\varphi)}{\sigma_t(1)}$$

Here π_t is the posterior probability measure process, and σ_t is the unnormalized posterior measure.

$\sigma_t(\varphi) = E_Q(\varphi(X_t)Z_t|\mathcal{Y}_t)$ satisfies the following SDE driven by the Q Brownian motion (Y_t) in the $(\mathcal{Y}_t)$ filtration:

$$\sigma_t(\varphi) = \sigma_0(\varphi) + \int_0^t \sigma_s(L_{s,Y}\varphi)ds + \int_0^t \sigma_s(L^1_{s,Y}\varphi)dY_s \qquad (9.5)$$

where $L_{s,Y}$ and $L^1_{s,Y}$ are differential operators on C^2 depending on time and on the past observations of Y:

$$L_{s,Y}\ \varphi = \frac{1}{2}(f^2(s, Y, \cdot) + g^2(s, Y, \cdot))\frac{\partial^2}{\partial^2 x}\varphi + b(s, Y, \cdot)\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\varphi$$
$$L^1_{s,Y}\ \varphi = h(s, Y, \cdot)\varphi + g(s, Y, \cdot)\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\varphi$$

To check this step, note that by the integration by parts formula

$$\begin{aligned}
d(\varphi(X_t)Z_t) &= Z_t d\varphi(X_t) + \varphi(X_t)dZ_t + d\langle \varphi(X_t), Z\rangle_t \\
&= Z_t\varphi'(X_t)dX_t + \frac{1}{2}Z_t\varphi''(X_t)d\langle X\rangle_t + Z_t\varphi(X_t)h(t, Y, X_t)dY_t + Z_t\varphi'(X_t)g(t, Y, X_t)h(t, Y, X_t)dt \\
&= Z_t\bigl\{\varphi'(X_t)g(t, Y, X_t) + \varphi(X_t)h(t, Y, X_t)\bigr\}dY_t + Z_t\varphi'(X_t)f(t, Y, X_t)dV_t + \\
&\quad + Z_t\varphi'(X_t)\bigl\{b(t, Y, X_t) - h(t, Y, X_t)g(t, Y, X_t) + g(t, Y, X_t)h(t, Y, X_t)\bigr\}dt \\
&\quad + \frac{1}{2}Z_t\varphi''(X_t)\bigl\{f(t, Y, X_t)^2 + g(t, Y, X_t)^2\bigr\}dt \\
&= Z_t\bigl\{\varphi'(X_t)g(t, Y, X_t) + \varphi(X_t)h(t, Y, X_t)\bigr\}dY_t + Z_t\varphi'(X_t)f(t, Y, X_t)dV_t \\
&\quad + Z_t\bigl\{\varphi'(X_t)b(t, Y, X_t) + \frac{1}{2}Z_t\varphi''(X_t)\bigl(f(t, Y, X_t)^2 + g(t, Y, X_t)^2\bigr)\bigr\}dt
\end{aligned}$$

In integral form this means

$$\varphi(X_t)Z_t = \varphi(X_0) + \int_0^t Z_s\big\{\varphi'(X_s)g(s,Y,X_s) + \varphi(X_s)h(s,Y,X_s)\big\}dY_s + \int_0^t Z_s\varphi'(X_s)f(s,Y,X_s)dV_s$$
$$+\int_0^t Z_s\big\{\varphi'(X_s)b(s,Y,X_s) + \frac{1}{2}\varphi''(X_s)\big(f(s,Y,X_t)^2 + g(s,Y,X_t)^2\big)\big\}ds$$

We take now conditional expectation under Q with respect to the σ-algebra $\mathcal{Y}_t$.

$$\sigma_t(\varphi) := E_Q(\varphi(X_t)Z_t|\mathcal{Y}_t) = E_Q(\varphi(X_0)|\mathcal{Y}_t)$$
$$+E_Q\bigg(\int_0^t Z_s\big\{\varphi'(X_s)g(s,Y,X_s) + \varphi(X_s)h(s,Y,X_s)\big\}dY_s\bigg|\mathcal{Y}_t\bigg)$$
$$+E_Q\bigg(\int_0^t Z_s\varphi'(X_s)f(s,Y,X_s)dV_s\bigg|\mathcal{Y}_t\bigg)$$
$$+E_Q\bigg(\int_0^t Z_s\big\{\varphi'(X_s)b(s,Y,X_s) + \frac{1}{2}\varphi''(X_s)\big(f(s,Y,X_t)^2 + g(s,Y,X_t)^2\big)\big\}ds\bigg|\mathcal{Y}_t\bigg)$$

and 9.5 follows by lemma 47.

When $\varphi(x) \equiv 1$ we get a linear SDE for the random normalizing constant in Bayes formula:

$$\sigma_t(1) = 1 + \int_0^t \sigma_s(1)E_P(h(s,Y,X_s)|\mathcal{Y}_s)dY_s$$

with solution

$$\sigma_t(1) = \exp\bigg(\int_0^t E_P(h(s,Y,X_s)|\mathcal{Y}_s)dY_s - \frac{1}{2}\int_0^t E_P(h(s,Y,X_s)|\mathcal{Y}_s)^2 ds\bigg)$$

Consequently by the Cameron Martin Girsanov theorem (35)

$$Y_t - \int_0^t E_P(h(s,Y,X_s)|\mathcal{Y}_s)ds$$

is a P Brownian motion in the $\{\mathcal{Y}_t\}$ filtration.

9.5 Final exam

: It is allowed to consult the literature and to collaborate with fellow students.

Question 1): Use the change of measure formula to show that

$$E_Q(Z_t|\mathcal{Y}_t) = \sigma_t(1) = \frac{dP|\mathcal{Y}_t}{dQ|\mathcal{Y}_t}$$

Question 2): Use integration by parts formula for the ratio $\pi_t(\varphi) = \sigma_t(\varphi)/\sigma_t(1)$ to prove the Zakai filter equation

$$\pi_t(\varphi) = \pi_0(\varphi) + \int_0^t \pi_s(L_{s,Y}\varphi)ds + \int_0^t \big\{\pi_s(L^1_{s,Y}\varphi) - \pi_s(h(s,Y,\cdot))\pi_s(\varphi)\big\}\big(dY_s - \pi_s(h(s,Y,\cdot))ds\big)$$

Question 3) Show that

$$Y_t - \int_0^t \pi_s(h(s, Y, \cdot))ds$$

is a Brownian motion with respect to the measure P and the filtration $(\mathcal{Y}_t)$.

Consider the linear Gaussian case with

$$\begin{aligned} dX_s &= X_s b(s)ds + f(s)dV_s + g(s)dW_s \\ dY_s &= X_s h(s)ds + dW_s \end{aligned}$$

with $b(s), h(s), f(s), g(s)$ deterministic functions.

Question 4):Write down the Zakai filter equation for the prediction process

$$\hat{X}_t := E(X_t|\mathcal{Y}_t)$$

Question 5): Write down the equation for the prediction error variance

$$\hat{\sigma}_t^2 := E((X_t - \hat{X}_t)^2|\mathcal{Y}_t)$$

Since the process (X_t, Y_t) is jointly Gaussian (why ? for example one can study the characteristic function) you should get a deterministic equation, called Riccati equation.

Since (X_t, Y_t) is jointly Gaussian, it follows that conditionally on the σ-algebra $\mathcal{Y}_t$, X_t is conditionally Gaussian with (random) conditional mean $\hat{X}_t$ and (deterministic) conditional variance $\hat{\sigma}_t^2$. You must use Gaussianity in order to compute the conditional moments $\pi_t(x^k)$ for $k = 1, 2, 3$ which will appear in the Zakai equation.

For simplicity you can assume that the functions $b(s), h(s), f(s), g(s)$ are constant. If you want to simplify further, assume that $g(s) = 0$.

A standard reference on stochastic filtering theory is in Liptser and Shiryaev statistics of random processes.